A REPLY

TO

STEPHEN GOSSON'S

SCHOOLE OF ABUSE

IN DEFENCE OF

POETRY MUSICK AND STAGE PLAYS

BY

THOMAS LODGE

1580?
Rotogênes can know Apelles by his line though he se not, and wife men can consider by the Penn the authortie of the writer though they know him not. The Rubie is discerned by his pale rednes, and who hath not hard that the Lyon is knowne by hys clawes. though Æsopes craftie crowe be neuer so destlye decked, yet is his double dealing eselie desiphered: & though men neuer so perfectly pollishe there wrytings with others sentences, yet the simple truth wil discover the shadow of ther follies: and bestowing euery fether in the bodye of the right M. tourne out the naked dissembler into his owen cote, as a spectacle of follye to all those which can rightlye Iudge what imperfections be. There came to my hands lately a little (woulde God a wittye) pamphlete, baring a fayre face as though it were the scoole of a buse but being by me aduisedly wayed I fynd it the offtcome of imperfections, the writer fuller of wordes then judgement, the matter certauely as ridiculus as ferius. asuredly his mother witte wrought this wonder, the child to disprayse his father the dogg to byte his mayster for
his dainty morcell. but I se (with Seneca) ye
the wrong is to be suffered, since he dispray-
seth, who by costome. hath left to speake
well. bot I meane to be short: and teach the
Maister what he knoweth not, partly that
he may se his owne follie, and partly that I
may discharge my promise, both binde me.
therefore I would wish the good scholmay-
sifer to ouer looke his abusés againe with
me, so shall he see an ocean of inormities
which begin in his first principle in the dis-
prayse of poetry. And firft let me familiarly
consider with this find faulthe what the lea-
erned haue alwayes esteemed of poetrie. Sen-
eca though he a stoke would haue a poetical
sonne, and amongst the auncientest Homer
was no les accompted then Humanus deus.
what made Alexander I pray you esteeme of
him so much? why allotted he for his works
so curious a cloffet? was ther no fitter vnder
prop for his pillow the a simple pamphlet?
in all Darius cofers was there no Iewell so
costly? for both my thinks these two (the one
the father of Philosophers, the other the
cheftaine of chiualrie) were both deceued
if all were as a Goffon would wish them, yf
poets paynt naughte but palterie toyes in
yearfe, their studies tended to folishness,
and in all their indeuors they did naught els but agendo nihil agere. Lord howe Virgil poore gnatt pricketh him, and how Ouis fley byteth him, he can beare no bourde, he hath rayfed vp a new sect of serius stoikes, that can abide naught but their own shadoe, and alow nothing worthye, but what they conceaue. Did you neuer reade (my o-uer wittie frend) that vnder the perforns of beastes many abuues were disshpered? haue you not reason to waye? that whatfoeuer e-ther Virgil did write of his gnatt, or Ouid of his fley: was all couerly to declare abuue? but you are (homo literatus) a man of the letter little sauoring of learning, your giddy brain made you leaue your thrift, and your abuues in London some part of your honestie. You say that Poets are subtil, if so, you haue learned that poyn of them, you can well glofe on a trifling text, but you haue dronke perhaps of Lethe, your gramer learning is out of your head, you forget your Accidence, you remeber not, that vnder the perfor of Aeneas in Virgil the practice of a dilligent captaine is described vnder ye shadoe of byrds, beastes and trees, the follies of the world were disshpered, you know not, that the creation is signified in the Image A. 2. of
of *Prometheus*, the fall of pryde in the person of *Narcissus*, these are toyes because they fa
uor of wisedome which you want: Marke what *Campanus* sayth, *Mira fabularum va-
nitas sed quae si introspiciantur videri possunt non vana*. The vanitie of tales is won-
derful, yet if we aduisedly looke into them they wil seme & prowe wise, how wonderful are the pithie poemes of *Cato*? the curious comedies of *Plautus*? how brauely discouere-
reth *Terence* our imperfeicto in his *Eunch*? how neatly dissiphereth he *Danus*? how plea
fauntly paynteth he out *Gnatho*? whom if we shoulde seeke in our dayes, I suppose he
would not be far from your parson. But I see you woulde seme to be that which you
are not, and as the prouerb saith *Nodum in Cirpo querere*: Poetes you saie we coulers
to couer their incouencies, and wittie senten-
ces to burnish theyr bawdery, and you diuin-
nite to couer your knauerye. But tell me
truth *Goffon* speakest thou as thou thinkest? what coelers findest thou in a Poete not to
be admitted? are his speachesumperfect? sa-
nor they of incistence. I think if thou haft a-
ny flame thou canst not but like & approue
the, are ther gods displefant vnto thee? doth
*Saturne* in his maiesty moue thee? doth *Juno*
with
with her riches displeaseth thee? doth Minerva with her weapon discomfort thee? doth Apollo with his harping harmest thee? thou mayst say nothing less than harmest thee because they are not, and I think to be-cause thou knowest them not. For wot thou that in the person of Saturne our decaying yeares are signified, in the picture of angry Juno our affections are deciphered, in ye per-son of Minerva is our understanding signified, both in respect of warre, as policie, when they faine that Pallas was begotten of the braine of Jupiter their meaning is none other, but that al wisedome (as the learned say) is from above, and commeth from the father of Lights: in the portraiture of Apollo all knowledge is denocated. So that, what so they wrot, it was to this purpose, in the way of pleasure to draw men to wisedome: for fe-ling the world in those daies was vnperfect, yt was necessary that they like good Phisi-ons: should so frame their potions, that they might be appliable to the quezie stomacks of their werif patients. but our studientes by your meanes haue made shipwrack of theyr labors, our schoolemaisters haue so offended that by your judgement they shall subire pox nam capitis for teaching poetry, the vnler-sitie is little beholding to you, al their prac-tices
ces in teaching are frioulos. Witt hath wrought that in you, that yeares and studie never fetled in the heads of our fageft doctors. No meruel though you disprayfe poe-trye, when you know not what it meanes. Erasimus will make that the path waye to to knowledge which you disprayfe, and no meane fathers vouchsafe in their serioufe questions of deuinitie, to insert poeticall senfures. I think if we shal wel ouerloke ye Philosophers, we shal find their judgemëts not halfe perfect. Poetes you saye sayle in their fables, Philosophers in the verye se-crets of Nature. Though Plato could wish the expulsion of Poetes from his well pub-liques, which he might doe with reason, yet the wisest had not all that same opinion, it had bene better for him to haue sercht more narowly what the soule was, for his defini- tion was verye frioulos, when he would make it naught els but Substantiam intelec-tus præsidiam. If you say that Poetes did la-bour about nothing, tell me (I besech you) what wonders wroughte those your dunce Doctors in ther reasons de ente et non ente? in their definition of no force, and les witt? how sweate they power soules in makinge more things then cold be? that I may vie your
your owne phrase, did not they spende one candle by seeking another. Democritus Epicurus with ther scholler Metrodorus how labored they in finding out more worlds the one? your Plato in midst of his premisses wrought that absurdite that neuer may be redd in Poets, to make a yeartly creature to beare the person of the creator, and a corruptible substance, an incomprehensible God: for determining of the principall causes of all thinges, a made them naughte els but an Idea which if it be conferred wyth the truth, his sentence. will sauour of Insci-ence. but I speake for Poetes, I answere your abuse, therefore I will disprove, or dispraye naught, but with you with the wise Plato, to dispraye that thing you offend not in. Seneca sayth that the studie of Poets, is to make childre ready to the vnderstanding of wisdom, and y'our auncients did teache artes Eleutherias. i. liberales, because the instructed childre by the instromet of knowledge in time became homines liberi. i. Philosophye. it may be that in reding of poetry, it happe ned to you as it is with the Oyfter for she in her swimming receiueth no ayre, and you in your reeding lesse instruction. it is reported that the shepe of Enboia want ther gale, and
and one the contrarye side that the beastes
of Naxus haue distentum fel. Men hope that
foclers should haue witt brought vpp in the
Vniuersite, but your sweet selfe with the
cattell of Enboia, since you left your College
haue loft your learning. you disprayse Max
iminos Tirius pollicey, and that thinge that
that he wrott to manifest learned Poets me-
ing, you attribute to follye. O holy hedded
man, why may not Juno resemble the ayre?
why not Alexander valour? why not
Vilisses pollicy? will you haue all for you
owne tothe? must men write that you maye
know theyr meaning? as though your wytt
were to wret all things? Alas simple Irus,
begg at knowledge gate awhile, thou haft
not wonne the mastery of learning. weane
thy selfe to wifedome, and vse thy tallant in
zeale not for enuie, abuse not thy knowledge
in disprayfing that which is pereles: I shold
bluff from a player, to become an enuiouse
preacher, if thou hadft zeale to preach, if for
Sions sake thou coldft not holde thy tougue,
thy true dealing were prayse worthy, thy re-
volting woulde counsell me to reuerence
thee. pittie weare it, that poertye shold be
displaced, full little could we want Buchan-
nans workes, and Boetius comfortes may
not
not be banished. what made Erasimus labor in Euripides tragedies? did he indueour by painting them out of Greece into Latine to manifest sinne vnto vs? or to confirme vs in goodnes? Labor (I pray thee) in Pamphlete more prayse worthy, thou haft not faued a Senator, therefore not worthye a Lawrell wretch, thou haft not (in disproving poetry) reproued an abuse, and therefor not worthy commendation. Seneca sayth that Magna vixte pars elabitur male agentibus, maxima nihill agentibus, tota alind agentibus, the most of our life (sayd he) is spent e-ther in doing euill, or nothing, or that wee should not, and I would wish you weare exempted from this senfure, geue eare but a little more what may be saied for poetrie, for I must be briefe, you haue made so greate matter that I may not stay on one thing to long, lest I leaue an other vntouched. And firft whereas you say, y' Tullie in his yeres of more judgement despised Poetes, harke (I pray you) what he worketh for them in his oratiō pro Archia poeta (but before you heare him leaft you fayle in the incounter, I would wysh you to to followe the aduise of the dafterdyke Ichneumon of Ægypt, who when shee beholdeth the Aspis her enemye to
to drawe night, calleth her fellowes together, bismereing her selfe with claye, against the byting and stroke of the serpant, armee your selfe, cal your witts together: want not your wepoms, left your imperfect judgement be rewarded with Midas eares. you had neede play the night burs now, for you say Owl hath misconned his parte, and for to who now a dayes he cries foole you: which hath brought such a fort of wondering birds about your eares, as I feare me will chatter you out of your Iuey bush. the worlde shames to see you, or els you are afraide to thow your selfe. you thought poetrye should want a patron (I think) when you forste published this inuective, but yet you fynde al to many euë preter expeditions, yea though it can speake for it self, yet her patron Tullie now shall tell her tale, Hac studia (fayth he) adolescentiam abunt, Seneitum oblac-tant, fecundas, res ornant, aduerfas perfugium ac Solatium prebent, delepliant domi, non im-pediantur foris, pernoeiant nobiscum, peragriri-antur rusticantur. then will you disprayfe y't which all men commend? you looke only vp on y't refute of y't abuse, nether respecting the importance of y't matter nor the weighe of y't wryter. Solon can fayne himselfe madde, to further
Chaucer in pleasant vain can rebuke sin uncontrold, & though he be lauith in the letter, his fence is serious. who in Rome lamented not Roscius death? & caft thou fuck no pleasure out of thy M. Claudiius writings? hark, what Cellarius a lear: ned father attributeth to it. acuit memoriam (faith he) it profiteth ye memory. yea & Tully attributeth it for prais to Archias & upon any theame he cold versify extemporary. who liketh not of the promptnes of Ouid? who not unworthely cold boft of himself thus Quicquid conabar dicere versus erat. who then doothe not wonder at poetry? who thinketh not ye it procedeth fro above? what made ye Chians & Colophonians fal to such controversy? Why seke ye Smirnians, to recover fro ye Salamini ans the prais of Homer? al wold hane him to be of ther city, I hope not for harme, but because of his knoldege. Themistocles desireth to be acquainted w those w could best decipher his prais. euen Marius himselfe, tho never so cruel, accepted of Plotinus poems. what made Afric anus esteme Ennius? why did Alexander giue prais to Achilles but for ye prayses which he found writte of hym by Homer? Why estemed Pompie so muche of Theophanes Mitiletes or Brutus so greatlye the wrytinges of Accius? Fulius was
was so great a fauourer of poetry, that after
the Aetolian warres, he attributed to the
Mufes those spoiles that belonged to Mars.
in all the Romaine conquest, hardeft thou
euer of a layne Poete? nay rather the Em-
perorours honored them, beautified them with
benefites, & decked their sanctuaries which
sacrifice. Pindarus colledg is not fit for spoil
of Alexander overcome, nether seareth poe-
try ye persecutors sword. what made Austin
so much affectate ye heavenly fury? not folly,
for if I must needes speake, ilind non ausim
affirmare, his zeale was, in setting vp of the
house of God, not in affectate eloquence, he
wrot not, he accompted not. he honnored
not, so much that (famous poetry) whych
we prayse, without cause, for if it be true
that Horace reporteth in his booke de arte
poetica, all the answeres of the Oracles
weare in verfe. among the precife Iewes,
you shall find Poetes, and for more maieftie
Sibilla will prophesie in verfe. Hiroaldus
can witnes with me, that David was a poet,
and that his vayne was in imitating (as S.
Ierom witneffeth) Horace, Flaccus, & Pinda-
rus, somtimes his verfe runneth in an Iam
bus foote, anone he hath recourse to a Saphi-
er vaine, and aliquando, semipede ingreditur.
asf
ask Iosephus, and he will tel you that Esaú, Iob and Salomon, voutsafed poetical practises, for (if Origen and he fault) not theyre verse was Hexameter, and pentameter. Enquire of Cassiodorus, he will say that all the beginning of Poetrye proceeded from the Scripture. Panlinus tho the byshop of Nolanum yet voutsafe the name of a Poet, and Ambrose tho he be a patriarke in mediolani loueth versifying Beda shameth not ye science that shameleffe Gasson misliketh. rede ouer Lactantius, his proove is by poetry. & Paul voutsafeth to overlooke Epimenides let the Apostel preach at Athens he disdaineth not of Aratus authorite. it is a pretye sentence yet not fo pretie as pithy. Poeta na scit orator fit as who should say, Poetrye commeth from aboue from a heauenly seate of a glorious God vnto an excellent creature man, an orator is but made by exercisfe. for if wee examine well what befell Ennus amongst the Romans, and Hesiodus amongst his contrimen the Gretians, howe they came by theyr knowledge whence they receued their heauenly furye, the first will tell vs that sleping vpone the Mount of Parnassus he dreamed that he receined the soule of Homer into him, after the which he became a Poete, the
the next will assure you that it commeth not by labor, nether that night watchings bringeth it, but ye we must haue it thence whence he fetched it we was (he saith) fro a wel of ye Museus we Cabelimus calleth Poru, a draught whereof drewe him to his perfection, so of a shephard he became an eloquent poet. well thee you see ye it commeth not by exercise of play making, nether infringendo of gawds, but from nature, and from above: and I hope ye Aristotle hath sufficiently taught you: that Natura nihil fecit frustra. Perseus was made a poete divino furore percitus, and whereas the poets were sayde to call for the Museus helpe ther mening was no other as Isococus Badius reporteth, but to call for heauenly inspiration from above to direct theyrr endeavours. nether were it good for you to sette light by the name of a poet since ye offspring from whence he commeth is so heauenly. Sibila in hir answers to Aeneas aginst hir will as the poet teeleth vs was possesed with this fury, ye wery consideratly but of the writing of poets, & you shal se that whereas ther matter is most heauenly, their stile is most loftye. a strange token of the wonderfull efficacry of the fame. I would make a long discourse vn to you of Platoes 4. furies but I leue them it
it pitieth me to bring a rodd of your owne making to beate you wythall. But mithinks while you heare thys I see you swallowe down your owne spittle for reuenge, where (God wot) my wryting fauoreth not of enuye. in this case I coulde wythe you fare farre otherwyse from your foe yf you please I wyll become your frende and see what a potion or recepyt I can frame fytt for your diet. and herein I will proue my selfe a practifer, before I purdge you, you shall take a preparative to dif burden your heauy hedde of thofe grose follis you haue conceued: but the receipt is bitter, therefore I would wythe you first to casteu your mouth with the Sugur of perfeueræce: for ther is a cold collop yᵗ must downe your throate yet suche a one as shall chaüge your complection quit. I wyll haue you theryore to taft first of yᵗ cold riuer Phricus, in Thracia which as Aristote reporteth changeth blacke into white, or of Scamandar, which maketh gray yalow yᵗ is of an eniuious mâ a wel minded perfon, re prehending of zeale yᵗ wherin he hath finned by folly, & so being prepard, thy purgation wyll worke more easie, thy vnderstandinge wyll be more perfitt, thou shalt bluflh at thy abuse, and reclaime thy selfe by force of argument.
argument so will thou prove of clene reco-
\[\text{16}\]
\[\text{uered patient, and I a perfecte practiser in framing so good a potion. this broughte to}\]
\[\text{passe I with the wil seeke out some abufe}\]
\[\text{in poetry, which I wil seeke for to difproue}\]
\[\text{by reason firft pronounced by no smal birde}\]
\[\text{euen Aristotle himself Poete (sayth he) multa}\]
\[\text{ta mentiuntur and to further his opinion fe-}\]
\[\text{uer Cato putteth in his cencure.}\]

\text{Admiranda canunt sed non credenda poetae.}\]
\[\text{these were fore blemishes if objected right-}\]
\[\text{ly and heare you may say the streme runues}\]
\[\text{a wronge, but if it be so by you leue I wyll}\]
\[\text{bring him shortly in his right chanel. My}\]
\[\text{answere shall not be my owne, but a learned}\]
\[\text{father shall tell my tale, if you wil know his}\]
\[\text{name men call him Lactantius: who euys}\]
\[\text{booke de divinis institutionibus reesoneth}\]
\[\text{thus. I supposeth (sayth he) Poets are full of}\]
\[\text{credit, and yet it is requesite for those that}\]
\[\text{wil understand them to be admonished, that}\]
\[\text{among them, not onely the name but the}\]
\[\text{matter beareth a shew of that it is not: for if}\]
\[\text{sayth he we examine the Scriptures litter}\]
\[\text{allye nothing will seeme more falls, and if}\]
\[\text{we way Poetes wordes and not ther mea-}\]
\[\text{ning, our learning in them wilbe very mene}\]
\[\text{you fee nowe that your Catoes judgement}\]
\[\text{as}\]

\[\text{16}\]

Digitized by Google
of no force and that all your obiections you
make agaynst poertye be of no valor yet lest
you should be altogether discoraged I wyll
helpe pou forwarde a little more, it pities
me to consider the weaknesses of your caufe I
wyll threfore make your strongest reason,
more stroug and after I haue builded it vp
destroy it agayn. Poets you confesse are e-
loquent but you reprowe them in their wan-
tonnesse, they write of no wisedom, you may
fay their tales are friulous, they prophane
holy things, they seeke nothing to the per-
fection of our soules. theyr practife is in o-
ther things, of leffe force: to this obiection I
anwer no otherwise then Horace doeth in
his booke de arte poetica where he wryteth
thus.
Siluestres homines facer interpresque deorum
Sedibus, et vietu seado deterruit orpheus.
Dictus ob hoc lenire Tigres rabidosque leones.
Dictus et Amphion Thebana condit urbis
Saxa mouere sone, testudius et prece blanda
Ducere quo vellet fuit hoc sapientia quondam.
Publica priuatis secernere sacra prophanis.
Concubitu prohibere vago, dare Iura maritis,
Opida moliri leges, niscidere ligno.

The holy spokesman of the Gods
With heauely Orpheus hight:
Did drue the savage men from wods.

B

And
And made them liue aright.
And therefore is sayd the Tygers fierce,
And Lyons full of myght
To overcom: Amphion, he
Was sayd of Theabs the founder,
Who by his force of Lute dyd cause,
The ftones to part a fonder.
And by his speach them did dereft.
Where he would haue them staye:
This wisedome this was it of olde
All strife for to allay.
To giue to euery man his owne,
To make the Gods be knowne
To driue each lecher from the bed,
That neuer was his owne.
To teach the law of mariage,
The way to build a towne,
For to engrau these lawes in woods
This was these mens renowne.
I cannot leaue Tirtheus pollicy vntouched,
who by force of his pen could incite men to
the defence of theyr countrye. if you require
of ye* Oracle of Apollo what successe you shal
haue: respondet bellico fo numine lo now you
see your objections my answers, you behold
or may perceiue manifeisty, that Poetes
were the first rayfors of cities, prescribers of
good lawes, mayntayners of religion, distur
bors
bors of the wicked, advancers of the wel disposed, inueters of laws, & laftly the very fot paths to knowledg. & vnderftading, ye if we fold beleue Herome he wil make Platos exiles honest me, & his pestiferous poets good preachers: for he accounteth Orpheus Muscus, & Linus, Christians, therefore Virgil (in his 6. boke of Aeneidos wher he leremedly de scribeth ye iourney of Aeneas to Ellisum) affertheneth vs, ye among them ye were ther for the zeale they beare toward there country, ther wer found Quinque pij vates et Phæbo digna loquii but I must answere al objeectiōs, I must fill every nooke. I must arme my self now, for here is the greatest bob I can gather out of your booke forth, Ovids abuses, in describ-ing whereof you labour very vehementlye termiūg him letcher, & in his perfon dispraise all poems, but shal on mans follye destroye a vniuerflal cōmodity? what gift what perfit knowledg hath ther bin, emong ye professors of wē ther hath not bin a bad, on the Angels haue sinned in heauē, Ađū & Eue in earthly pa radīē, emōg ye holy apostles vngratious Iu das. I refon not ye al poets are holy but I af irme ye poetry is a heauēly gift, a perfit gift then wē I know not greater pleſure. & surely if I may speke my mind I thik we shal find

B. 2. but
but few poets if it were exactly wayd what they oughte to be your Musconian straun-
gers, your Scithian monsters wonderful by one Eurus brought vpon one stage in ships
made of Sheepefskins, wyll not proue you a poe ether your life alow you to bee of that
learning if you had wifely wayed ye abufe of poetry if you had reprehended ye foolish fan-
tasies of our poets nomine non re which they bring forth on stage, my self would haue liked
of you & allowed your labor. but I perceiue nowe ye all red colloured stones are not Ru-
bies, nether is euer ye Alexander ye hath a stare in his cheke, al lame men are not V-
ulcans, nor hooke nofed men. Ciceroes nether each profeesser a poet, I abhore those poets
that favors of ribaldry, I will with the zealous admit the expullcion of inche enormi-
ties poetry is dispraised not for the folly that is in it, but for the abuse whiche manye ill
Wryters couller by it. Beleeue mee the magestrats may take aduise, (as I knowe
wifely can) to roote out those odde rymes which runnes in euery rascales mouth. Sa-
uoring of rybaldry, those foolish ballets, that are admitted, Make poets good and
godly practifes to be refusfed. I like not of a wicked Nero that wyll expell Lucan, yet ad-
mit
mit I of a zealous governour that wil seke to take away the abuse of poetry. I like not of an angrye Augustus which wyll banishe Ovid for enuy, I loue a wise Senator, which in wisdome wyll correct him and with aduise burne his follyes: vnhappy were we yf like poore Scaurus we shoulde find Tiberius that wyll put vs to death for a tragedy making but moost blessed were we, if we might find a judge that seuerely would amende the abufes of Tragedies, but I leaue the reformation thereof to more wyfer than my selfe, And retorne to Gossion whom I wythe to be fully perswaded in this caufe, and therefore I will tell hym a pretie story, which Justin wryteth in the prayse of poetye. The Lacedemonians when they had loste many men in diuers incountryes with theyr enemyes foughte to the Oracles of Apollo requiring how they myght recover theyr losstes, it was answered that they myght overcome if so be that they could get an Athenian governor, whereupon they sent Orators vnlo the Athenians humbly requesting them that they woulde appoynt them out one of theyr best captaynes: the Athenians owinge them old malice, sent them in steeede of a soldado vechio a scholar of the Muses. in steeede of
of a worthy warrior a poore poet, for a cour-
rageous Themistocles a sily Tirthetus, a
man of great eloquence and singuler wytte,
yet was he but a lame lymde captaine more
fit for the coche then the field, the Lacedemo-
nians trusting the Oracle, receued the cham-
pion, and fearing the gouernment of a stran-
ger, made him ther Citizen. which once don
and he obteining the Dukdome, he attend
the theater, and ther very learnedly, wysh-
ing them to forget theyr folly, and to thinke
on victory they being acuate by his eloquence
waging battail won the fiede. Lo now you
see that the framing of common welthes, &
defence therof, proceedeth from poets, how
dare you therfore open your mouth against
them? how can you disprayfe the preferuer
of a countrye? you compare Homer to Me-
theus, cookes to Poetes, you shame your
selfe in your vnreuerent similituds, you may
see your follyes verbum sapienti sat. where
as Homar was an ancient poet, yow disalow
him, and accompte of those of lesser judge-
ment. Strabo calleth poetry, primam sapi-
entiam. Cicero in his firste of hys Tuscu-
lans attributeth ye inuencion of philosophy,
to poets. God keepe vs from a Plato that
should expel such men. pittie were it that the
memo-
memory of these valiant victours should be
hidden, which haue dyed in the behalfe of
their countryes: miserable were our state yt
we wanted those worthy volumes of poetry
could the learned beare the losse of Homer?
or our younglings the wryttings of the Man-
tuan? or you your volumes of historyes? be-
leue me yt you had wanted your Mysteries
of nature, & your stately storyes, your booke
would haue scarce bene ledde wyth matter.
if therefore you will deale in things of wis-
dom, correct the abuse, honor the science, re-
newe your schoole, crye out over Hieru-
alem wyth the prophet, the woe that he pro-
nounced, with the teacher to reforme his
lyfe, that his weake scholler may prowe the
wyser, cry out against vnfacable defyre in
rich men, tel the house of Iacob theyr iniqui-
ties, lament with the Apostle the want of
laborers in the Lords vineyards, cry out on
those dume doggs that will not barke, wyll
the mightye that they ouermayfter not the
poore, and put downe the beggers prowde
heart by thy perfwasions. Thunder oute
wyth the Prophete Micha the mesage
of the L.ORD, and wyth hym defyre
the Judges to heare thee, the Prynces
of Iacob to hearken to thee, and those of

B. 4.
the house of Israell to understanding them that they abhorre judgement, and prevalent equitie, that they judge for rewardes, and that theyr priests teach for hyre, and the prophets thereof prophesie for money, and yet that they saye the Lorde is wyth them, and that no euiil can befall them, breath out the sweete promises to the good, the curfies to the badde, tell them that a peeace muste needes haue a warre, and that God can rayse vp another Zenacharib, shew the that Salamons kingdome was but for a seacon and that aduersitie cometh ere we espye it. thesse be the songes of Sion, thesse be those rebukes which you oughte to add to abuses recouer the body, for it is sore, the appended thereof will easely be reformed, if that wear at a staye, but other matter call me and I must not staye vpon this onely, there is an easier task in hand for me, and that which if I may speake my conscience, fitteth my vain beest, your second abuse Goffon, your second abuse your disprayses of Mufik, which you vnaduisededly terme pyping: that is it wyll most byte you, what so is a ouerstay of life, is displeasant to your perfon, mufik may not stand in your presence, whereas all the learner Philosopher haue alwayes had it in reverence,
reuerence. *Homar* commendeth it highly, referring to the prayses of the Gods whiche Goffon accompteth solifhnesse, looke vpon the harmonie of the Heauens? hange they not by Mufike? doe not the *Spheares* moue? the *primus* motor gourne. be not they *inferiora corpora* affected quadam *jumpathia* and agreement? howe can we measure the debilitie of the patient but by the disordered motion of the pulse? is not man worfe accompted of when he is most out of tune? is there any thinge that more affecteth the fenne? doth there any pleasure more acuat our vnderstanding, can the wonders *y* hath wroughte and which you your selfe confesse no more moue you? it fitteth well nowe that the learned haue sayd, *mufica requirit generofum animu* which since it is far from you, no maruel though you fauor not that profession. it is reported of the *Camelion* that the shee can chaunge her selfe vnto all coollors faue whyte, and you can accompte of all thinges faue such as haue honesty. *Plutarch* your good Mayfter may bare me witnes, that the ende whereto Mufick was, will proue it prayses worthy, O Lorde howe maketh it a man to remember heauenly things. to wönder at the works of the creator, *Eloquence* can
can stay the fouldiers f worde from slayinge
an Orator, and shall not musike be magni-
ified which not onely saueth the bodye but is
a comfort to the soule? Dauid reilyseth sin-
geth and prayeth the Lorde by the Harpe,
the Simbale is not remoued from his san-
cuary, the Aungels syng gloria in excelsis.
Surely the imagination in this present in-
stant, calleth me to a deepe consideracion of
my God. looke for wonders where musike
worketh, and wher harmonie is ther folow-
eth increcible deleation. the bowels of the
earth yeld, where the instrument foundeth
and Pluto cannot keepe Proserpina if Orphe
us recorde. The Seas shall not swallowe
Arion whilst he fingeth, nether shall hee pe-
rish while he harpeth, a doleful tuner yf a di-
ing musition can moue a Monster of ye sea.
to mourne. a Dolphin respectet a heauen-
ye recorde. call your selfe home therefore
and reclayme thys follye, it is to soule to
bee admitted, you may not mayntaine it. I
hadd well hoped you woulde in all thefe
thynges haue wifelye admytted the thyng,
and disallowe naughte but the abuse, but
I see your mynde in your wryting was
to penn somewaht you knowe not what,
and
and to confyrme it I wot not howe, so that your selfe hath hatched vs an Egge yet so that it hath blest vs wyth a monisterus chickin, both wythoute bedde, and also tayle, lyke the Father, full of imperfection and leffe zeale. well marke yet a lyttle more, beare with me though I be bytter, my loue is neuer the leffe for that I haue learned of Tullye, that Nulla remediatam faciunt dolorem quam quae sunt salutaris, the sharper medycine the better it cures, the more you see your follye, the sooner may you a-mende it. Are not the straines in Musike to tickle and delyght the eare? are not our warlike instruments to moue men to valor? You confesse they moue vs, but yet they delight not our eares, I pray you whence grew that poyn of Phylosophy? it is more then euer my Mayster taught mee, that a thynge of founde shoulde not delyghte the eare, belyke yee suppose that men are monsters, withoute eares, or else I thynke you wyll faye they heare with theire heele, it may bee so, for indeede when wee are are delighted with Musike, it maketh our heart to scypp for ioye, and it maye bee perhaps by assending from the heele to the hygher partes, it may moue vs, good policie
policy in sooth, this was of your owne coyning your mother neuer taught it you, but I wyll not deale by reafon of philosophye wyth you for that confound your fences, but I can afer you this one thinge, that this principle will make the wifer to mislike your invention, it had bene a fitter iest for your howlet in your playe, then an ornamet in your booke. but since you wrote of abusës we may licence you to lye a little, so yᵉ abusë will be more manifést lord with how goodly a cote haue you clothed your conceiptes, you abound in storyes but impertinent, they bewray your reading but not your wisëdom would God they had bin well aplied. But now I must play the musitian right nolesse buggs now come in place but pauions and mesures, dumps & fancies & here growes a great question, what musick Homer vfed in curing yᵉ diseased gretians, it was no dump you say, & so think I, for yᵗ is not apliable to sick men, for it faureth Malancholie. I am sure, it was no mesure, for in those days they were not such good dæfers for foth the what was it? if you require me. if you name me the instrumet, I wyl tel you what was yᵉ musik. mean while a gods name let vs both dout, yᵗ it is no part of our saluation to know what it was
was nor how it went? when I speake wyth
**Homer** next you shal knowe his anwere.
But you can not be content to erre but you
must maintain it to. **Pithagoras** you say a-
lowes not that musek is decerned by eares,
but hee wisheath vs to assend vnto the skie &
marke that harmony. surely thys is but one
doctrors opinion (yet I dislike not of it) but
to speake my conscience my thinkes museke
beft pleafeth me when I heare it, for other-
wise the catter walling of Cats, were it not
for harmonie: should more delight mine eies
then the tunable voyces of men. but these
things are not the chiefeft poynts you shote
at, thers somewhat els sticketh in your stom-
ak God graunt it hurt you not, from the
daunce you runn to the pype, from 7. to 3.
which if I shoulde add I beleue I coulde
wret out halfe a fcore incoveniences more
out of your booke. our pleafant confortes do
discomfort you much, and because you lyke
not thereof, they arr discomendable, I haue
heard it is good to take sure fotinge when
we trauel vnknowen countryes, for when
we wade aboue our shoelatchet **Appelles**
wyll reprehende vs for coblers, if you had
bene a father in musek and coulde haue de-
cerned of tunes I would perhaps haue likt
your
your opinion somewhat where now I abhor it, if you wear a professor of that practice I would quickly persuade you, that the adding of strings to our instrument make the sound more harmonious, and that the mixture of Musike maketh a better concert. but to preach to unskillful is to persuade y' brut beasts, I wyl not stand long in thys point although the dignity thereof require a volume, but howe learned men hane esteemed this heavenly gift, if you please to read you shall see. Socrates in hys old age will not disdain to learn y'science of Musik amog children, he can abide their correction, so much accustom he that, w't you contemn, so profitable thought he y', w't you misdik. Solon wil esteeme so much of y's knowledge of singing, y' he will sooner forget to dye the to sing. Pythagoras likis it so wel y' he will place it in Greece. and Aristoxenus will faye y' the foule is musik. Plato (in his booke de legibus) will affirme that it can not be handled without all sciences, the Lacedemonians & Cretensis were sturred to warre by Anapestus foot, and Timotheus with the same incensed kinge Alexander to batel, ye yf Boeetus fitten not, on Tauromitanus (by this Phrigian found) hastened to burn a house wher a strupet was hidden. so litle abideth this heavenly harmony our
our humane filthines, yᵉ it worketh wonders as you may perceive most manifestly by the history of Agamemnon who going to yᵉ Trojan war, left at home a musitian yⁿ playde the Dorian tune, who wᵗ the foote Spondeus preferred his wife Clytemnestra in chastity & honesty, wherfore she cold not bee deflowered by Agistas, before he had wickedly slain the musitian. so yⁿ as the magnetes draweth Iorne, & the Theamides (wⁿ growth in Egypt) drieuth it away: so musik calleth to it selfe al honest pleasures, & dispelleth frō it all vaine misdemeanors. yⁿ matter is so platifull that I cannot find wher to end, as for beginnings they be infuite, but these shall suffice. I like not to long circumstances wher les doe serue. only I wish you to account wel of this heauely concert, wⁿ is ful of perfettiō, proceeding frō aboue, drawing his original frō the motion of yⁿ stars, frō the agreement of the planets, frō the whisteling winds & frō al those celestial circles, where is ether perfect agreement or any Sumphonia. but as I like musik so admit I not of thos that depraye the fame your pipers are as odius to mee as your selfe, nether alowe I your harpinge merye beggers: although I knewe you my selfe a professed play maker, & a paltry actor. since which yⁿ windmil of your wit hath bin torned
so long wyth the wynde of folly, that I fear me we shall see the dogg returne to his vomit, and the clenfed sow to her myre, and the reformed scholemayster to hys old teaching of follye. beware it be not so, let not your booke be a blemish to your own profession. Correct not musik thersore whē it is praies worthy, leaft your worthesse misliking bewray your madness. way the abuse and that is matter sufficient to serue a magistrates animaduersion. heere may you aduise well, and if you haue any stale rethorik flourisht vpon thyse text, the abuse is, when that is a pplyed to wantonness, which was created to shewe Gods worthinesse. When ye shamefull reforts of shameles curtezanes in sinful sonnets, shal prophan vertue these are no light sinnes, these make many goodmen lament, this caufeth parents hate there right borne children, if this were refomed by your policie I shoule esteeme of you as you wysh. I feare me it fareth far other wyse, latet anguis in herba, vnder your fare show of confience take heede you cloake not your abuse, it were pittie the learned shoude be ouerseene in your simplenesse, I feare me you will be politick wyth Machaueel not zealous as a prophet. Well I will not
not stay long upon the abuse, for that I see it is to manifest, the remembrance thereof is discommendable among the godly, and I my self am very loth to bring it in memory to the wise advised reader these ma suffice, to flee the Crocodel before hee commeth, lest we be bitten, and to avoid the abuse of musik, since we se it, lest our misery be more When we fall into folly. Idus piscator jacit, you heare open confession, these abuses are disclaimed by our Goffon, he is sory that hee hath so leudlye liued, & spent the oyle of his perfection in vnfauery Lampes, he hath Argus eyes to watch him now, I wold with him beware of his Islington, and such lyke resorts, if now he retourne from his repented lyfe to his old folly, Lord how foule wil be his fall. men know more then they speake if they be wife, I feare me some will blushe that readeth this, if he be bitten, wold God Goffon at that instant might haue a watchman. but I see it were needelesse, perhaps he hath Os durum, and then what auayleth their presence. Well, I leae this poynyt til I know further of your mynde, mean while I muft talke a little wyth you about ye thyrd abuse, for the cater coesens of pypers, theyr names (as you terme them) be players, & I think
34
thinke as you doe, for your experience is suf-
cient to enforce me. but here I must loke
about me, quacunque te tegeris uolus est, here
is a talk that requireth a long treatis, and
what my opinion is of players ye now shall
plainly perceue. I must now ferch my wits,
I see this shall passe thrugh he many feuere
sensors handling, I must aduise me what I
write, and write that I would wysh. I way
wel the seriofines of the caufe, and regarde
verymuch the Judges of my endeuer, whom
if I could I would periwade, that I woulde
not nourish abufe, nether mayntaine that
which should be an vniuerfall discoomoditye.
I hope they wil not iudge before they read,
nether condemne without occasion The wif-
seft wil alwayes carry to eares, in y\textsuperscript{e} they are
to diferne two indifferent causes. I meane
not to hold you in suspe\textsuperscript{c}, (feuere Judges) if
you greedely expect my verdit brefely this it
is.

Demostines thoughte not that Phillip
shoulde overcome when he reproued hym,
nether feared Cicero Anthonies force, when
in the Senate hee rebuked hym. To the igno-
rant ech thinge that is vunknowne fenes
vnprofitable, but a wise man can foresee and
prayse by proffe. Pythagoras could fy poute
in women's eyes two kinds of tears, the one of grief the other of deceit: & those of judgment can from the same flower suck honey with the bee, from whence the Spyder (I mean the ignorant) take their poison. men y' haue knowledge what comedies & tragedies be, wil commend the, but it is sufferable in the folio to reprove that they know not, because ther mouthes wil hardly be stopped. Firste therefore if it be not tedious to Goffen to harken to the lerned, the reader shal perceiue the antiquity of playmaking, the inventors of comedies, and therewithall the use & commoditie of the. so that in your end I hope my labor shal be liked, and the lerned wil former conceive his folly. For tragedies & comedies Donate the gramarian sayth, they were invented by lerned fathers of the old time to no other purpose, but to yeelde prayse vnto God for a happy harvest, or plentifull yeere. and that thys is trewe the name of Tragedye doeth importe, for if you consider whence it came, you shall perceiue (as Iodocus Badius reporteth) that it drewe his original of Tragos, Hircus, & Ode, Cantus, (so called) for that the actors thereof had in rewarde for their labour, a Gotes skynne fylled wyth wyne. You see then that the firste

C. 2. matter
matter of Tragedies was to giue thankes and prayses to GOD, and a gratefull prayer of the countrymen for a happye haruest. and this I hope was not discom- mendable. I knowe you will judge is fartheft from abuse. but to wade farther, thys fourme of inuention being found out, as the dayes wherein it was vied did decay, and the world grew to more perfection, so yt witt of the younger forte became more riper, for they leaving this fourme, inuented another, in the which they altered the nature but not the name: for for sonnets in prayse of ye gods, they did set forth the lower fortune of many exiles, the miserable fall of haples princes, The ruinous decay of many coutryes, yet not content with this, they presenteth the luyes of Satyrs; So that they might wiselye vnder the abuse of that name, difcouver the folly of many theyr folishe fellow citizens. and those monsters were then, as our parasites are now adayes: suche, as with pleasure re-prehended abuse. as for comedies because they bear a more pleasanter vain, I wil leave the other to speake of them. Tully defines them thus. Comedia (faith he) is Imitatio vitae, spectulum consuetudinis, & imago veri- tatis, and it is sayde to be termed of Comai,
(emongste the Greekes) whiche signifieth *Pagos, & Ode, Cantus*: for that they were exercised in the fiedle. they had they beginning wyth tragedies, but their matter was more pleasaunt, for they were suche as did reprehensive, yet *quodam lepore*. These first very rudely were inuented by *Susarion Bullus, & Magnus*, to auncient poets, yet so, that they were meruelous profitable to the reclamyng of abuse: whereupon *Eupolis* with *Cartinus, & Aristophanes*, began to write, and with ther eloquenter vaine and perfection of stil, dyd more feuereely speake agaynste the abuses the they: which *Horace* himselfe witnesseth. For sayth he ther was no abuse but these men reprehended it. a thefe was lothe to be scene one there spectacle. a coward was neuer present at their assemblies. a backbiter abhord that company. and I my selfe could not hane blamed your (Gosson) for exempting your selfe from this theater, of troth I shoulde have lyked your pollicy. These therefore, these wer they that kept men in awe, these restrayned the vnbriddled cominaltie, wherupon *Horace* wisely sayeth.

*Oderunt peccare boni, virtutis amore.*
*Oderunt peccare mali, formidine pena.*

The
The good did hate al sinne for vertues loue
The bad for feare of shame did sin remoue.

Yea would God our realme could light vp
pon a Lucilius, then should the wicked bee
poyned out from the good, a harlot woulde
seeke no harbor at stage plais, left she hold
here her owne name growe in question: and
the discourse of her honesty cause her to bee
hated of the godly. as for you I am sure of
this one thing, he would paint you in your
players ornamēts, for they best becam you.
But as these sharpe corrections were disa-
nulde in Rome when they grewe to more
licenciousnes: So I fear me if we hold prac-
tise it in our dayes, the same entertainmente
would followe. But in ill reformed Rome
what comedies now? a poets wit can cor-
rect, yet not offend. Philemon will mitigate
the corrections of sinne, by reproving them
couerly in shadowes. Menandar dare not
offend ye Senate openly, yet wants he not a
parasite to touch them priuely. Terence wyl
not report the abuse of harlots vnder there
proper stile, but he can finely girde the vnder
the person of Thais, hee dare not openly tell
the Rich of theyr coutousnesse and seuerity
towards their children, but he can controle
them
them vnder the perfon of Durus Demeas. he
muft not shew the abuse of noble yong gen-
tilmen vnder theyr owne title, but he wyll
warne them in the perfon of Pamphilus. wil
you learne to know a parasite? Looke vpon
his Daues. wyl you feke the abuse of courtly
flatterers? behold Gnaio. and if we had some
Satericall Poetes nowe a dayes to penn
our comedies, that might be admitted of
zeale, to difcypher the abuses of the worlde
in the perfon of notorious offenders. I know
we should wisely ryd our assemblyes of ma-
ny of your brotherhod, but because you may
haue a full scope to reprehende, I will ryp
vp a rablemet of playmakers, whose wrigh-
tinges I would wyfe you overlooke, and
feek out theyr abuses. can you mislike of
Cecilius? or difpife Plinius? or amend Ne-
vius? or find fault with Licinius? where in of-
fended Aesopus? I am sure you can not but
wonder at Terrence? wil it please you to like
of Turpelius? or alow of Trabea? you muft
needs make much of Ennius for overloke al
thes, & youshal find ther volums ful of wit if
you examin the: so ye if you had no other ma-
ters, you might deterue to be a doctor, wher
now you are but a folifhe scholemaiter. but
I wyll deale wyth you verye frendlye,

C. 4. I
I wil resolue eueri doubt that you find, those instrumentes which you mislike in playes grow of auncient custome, for when *Roffius* was an Actor, be sure that as with his tears he mowed affections, so the Musitian in the Theater before the entrance, did mornefully record it in melody (as *Servius* reporteth.) The actors in Rome had also gay clothing & every man's apparel was apiable to his part & person. The old men in white, ye rich men in purple, the parasite disguisely, the yong men in gorgeous coulours, ther wanted no devise nor good judgemen of ye comedy, where I suppose our players, both drew ther plaies & fourme of garments. as for the appointed dayes wherein comedies wer shoven, I reede that the Romaynes appoynted them on the festiaual dayes, in such reputation were they had at that time. Also *Iodocus Badius* will affertain you that the actors for shewing pleasure receu'd some profite. but let me apply those dayes to ours, their actors to our players, their autors to ours. surely we want not a *Roffius*, nether ar ther great scarcity of *Terrences* professi, but yet our men dare not nowe a dayes presume so much, as the old Poets might. and therefor they apply ther writing to the peoples vain
wheras, if in the beginning they had ruled, we should now adaies haue found smal spec-
tacles of folly. but (of truth) I must confes
with Aristotle, that men are greatly deligh-
ted with imitation, and that ic were good to
bring those things on stage, that were alto-
gether tending to vertue: all this I admit, &
hartely wysh, but you say vnlesse the thinge
be taken away the vice will continue, nay I
say if the style were changed the practice
would profit. and sure I thinke our theatres
fit, that Ennius seeing our wāton Glicerium
may rebeke her, if our poetes will nowe be-
come seuer, and for prophæue things write
of vertue: you I hope shoulde see a reformed
state in those thinges, which I feare me yf
they were not, the idle heeded commones
would worke more mischiefe. I wish as zeal
ously as the best that all abuse of playinge
were abolisshed, but for the thing, the anti-
quitie causeth me to allow it, so it be vied as
it should be. I cannot allow the prophaning
of the Sabaoth, I praise your reprehension
in that, you did well in discommending the
abuse, and surely I wysh that that folly wer
dislaymed, it is not to be admitted, it maketh
those finne, whiche perhaps if it were not,
would have binne present at a good sermon.
it
it is in the Magistrate to take away that order, and appoynt it otherwyse. but sure it were pittie to abolish y' which hath so great vertue in it. because it is abused. The Germanes when the vfe of preaching was forbidden them, what helpe had they I pray you? forfoth the learned were fayne courtely in comedies to declare abuses, and by playing to incite the people to vertues, wbe they might heare no preaching. Those were lamentable dayes you will say, and so thinke I, but was not this I pray you a good help in reforming the decaying Gospel? you see then how comedies (my seuer judges) are quested both for ther antiquity, and for ther commoditie. for the dignity of the wrighters, and the pleasure of the hearers. But after your discrediting of playmaking, you value vpon the fore somewhat, and among many wise workes there be some that fitte your vaine: the practife of parasites is one, which I meruel it likes you so well since it bites you so sore. but sure in that I like your judgement, and for the rest to, I approue your wit, but for the pigg of your own sow, (as you terme it) assuredly I must discom- mend your verdit, tell me Goslon was all your owne you wrote there: did you borow nothing
nothing of your neighbours? Out of what booke patched you out Ciceros oration? whence fet you Catulins inuectuie. Thys is one thing, alienam olet lucernâ non tuam. so that your helper may wisely reply upon you with Virgil.

*Hos ego verficulos feci tulit alter honores.*

I made thes verfes other bear the name. beleue me I shoule preferr Wilsens. shorte and sweete if I were iudge, a peece surely worthy prayse, the practice of a good scholler, would the wiser would ouerlooke that, they may perhaps cull some wisedome, out of a players toye. Well, as it is wisedome to commend where the cause requireth, so it is a poyn of folly to praife without deferte. you dislike players very much, theyr dealings be not for your commodity, whom if I myghte aduise they shoule learne thys of Juuenal.

*Vinendum est rekle,*
*cum propter plurima, tum his*

Pracipue caulis: vt lingus mancipiorum
Contenas. Nà lingua mali pars pessima serui.

We ought to leade our liues aright,

For
44
For many causes moue.
Especially for this same cause,
Wisdom doth vs behone.
That we may set at nough those blames,
which servants to vs lay,
For why the tongue of euell slauoe,
Is worft as wifemen euer say.

Methinks I heare some of them verifying
these verfes vpon you, if it be so that I hear
them, I wil concele it, as for the statute of
apparrell and the abufes therof, I see it ma-
nifestly broken. and if I should seeke for ex-
ample, you cannot but offend my eyes. For
if you examine the statutez exactly, a simple
cote should be fitted to your backe. we shold
bereue you of your brauerye, and examine
your auzeftry, & by profession in respect of ye
statute, we shold find you catercens with
a, (but hush) you know my meaning, I muft
for pitie fauor your credit in that you weare
once a scholler. you runne farther to Car-
ders, dicers, fencers, bowlers, daunfers, &
tomblers. whose abufes I wold rebuke with
you, had not your self moued other matters.
but to eche I say thus, for dicing I wythe
thofe that know it not to leaue to learn it, &
let the fall of others make them wifere. Yf
they
they had an Alexander to govern they shold be punish'd, and I could wish them not to a bufe the lenitie of their prince. Cicero for a great blemish reputeth that which our gentilmen vie for brauery, but sufficit ista leniter attigisse, a word against fencers, & so an-end. whom I wish to beware with Demonax left admitting theyr fencing delightes, they destroy (with the Athenians) the alters of peace, by rayfing quarrellous causes, they worke vprores: but you and I reproose the in abvse, yet I (for my part) cannot but allow the practise so it be well vied. as for the filling of our gracious princes coffers with peace, as it pertaineth not to me, because I am none of her receiuors, so men think vn-leffe it hath bine lately you haue not bene of her maiesties counfel. But now here as you begin folishly, so surely you end vnernedly. prefer you warre before peace? the sword be fore the Gounne? the rule of a Tyrant, before ye happy days of our gracious Queen? you know the philofophers are against you, yet dare you stand in handy grips wyth Cicero: you know that force is but an instrumet when counsell fayleth, and if wisedome win not, farwel warre. Aske Alphonfs what counsellors he lyketh of? hee will say his bookes?
bookes, and hath not I pray you pollicy al-
waies ouermaastered force? who subdued Ha-
nibal in his great royality? he y' durst knock
at Rome gates to haue the opened is nowe
become a pray to a sylly senator. Appius
Claudius et senex et caus a father full of
wisedome can releue the state of decaying
Rome. and was it force that subdued Mari-
us? or armes that discouered Catulins con-
spiracies? was it rash reuendi in punishing
Cethegus? or want of witt in the discouerye
of treason? Cato can correct himselfe for tra-
veling by Sea, when the land profereth paf
fage, or to be folle hardy in ouer mutch ha-
zard. Aristotle accompleth counsell holye, &
Socrates can terme it the key of certentye.
what shal we count of war but wrath, of bat-
tel but haftines, and if I did rule (with Au-
gustus Cesar) I woulde refue these coun-
selers. what made ye oracle I praye you ac-
compt of Calchas so much? was it not for
his wisedome? who doth not like of the go-
uerner that had rather meete with Vnum
Nestorem then decem Aiaces? you cannot
tame a Lyon but in tyme, neither a Tigres
in few dayes. Counsell in Regulus will pre-
ferring the liberty of his country before his
lyfe, not remit the deliuerie of Carthaginian
captiuus
captuues, *Hannibal* shall flesh himselfe on an olde mans carkas, whose wisedome preferrued his citty. *Adrian* with letters can governe hys legions, and rule feasablye his prouinces by policye. aske *Siluius Italicus* what peace is and he will say?

*Pax optima rerum quas homini nouisse.*
*datum est, pax vna triumphis*
*Innumeris potior, pax custodire salutem.*
*Et ciues aequare potens.*

No better thing to man did nature
Euer giue then peace,
Then which to know no greater ioy,
Can come to our encrease.
To softer peace is styay of health,
And keepes the land in eafe.

Take coufell of *Ouid* what fayth he?
*Candida pax homines, trux dect atra feras.*
To men doth heauenly peace pertaine,
And currish anger fitteth brutishe vaine?

Well as I wiff it to haue continuance, so
I praye God wyth the Prophet it be not a busied. and becaufe I think my felfe to haue sufficiently answered that I supposed, I conclude
conclude wyth this. God preferue our peacable princes, & confound her enemies. God enlarge her wisedom, that like Saba she may seeke after a Salomon: God confounde the imaginations of her enemies, and perfite his graces in her, that the daies of her rule may be continued in the bonds of peace, that the house of the chosen Iraelites may be maynteyned in happinesse: lastly I frendly bid Goffen farwell, wyshinge him to temper his pen with more discretion.

FINIS.
Hunterian Club

XLIX — Sixth Year

AN ALARUM
AGAINST Vsurers
&c.

BY
THOMAS LODGE

REPRINTED FROM THE FIRST EDITION 1681

PRINTED FOR THE HUNTERIAN CLUB
1879
A N
Alarum against Vfurers.

Containing tryed experiences against worldly abuses.

WHEREIN GENTLEMEN
may finde good counells to confirme them,
and plesant Histories to delight them:
and every thing so interlaced with
varietie: as the curious may be sa-
tisfied with raresesse, and the
curious with pleasure.

HENCEUPON are annexed the delectable historie of Forbo-
nius and Frisceria: with the lament-
table Complaint of Truth o-
uer England. Written by Tho-
mas Lodge, of Lincolnes
Inne, Gentleman.

O Vita! misero longa, salici breuis.

Imprinted at London by
T. Elfe, for Sampson Clarke, and are
to be sold at his shop by Guyld Hall.

1584.
1877, Dec. 5.

Subscription fund.
To The Right worshipfull, Sir Philip Sidne Knight, indued with all
perfections of learning, and titles of Nobilitie:
Thomas Lodge Gen. wisheth continuance of
honour, and the benefits of happy
Studie.

It is not (noble Gentleman) the titles of
Honour that allureth me, nor the nobilitie
of your Parents that induceth me, but the
admiration of your vertues that perfuadeth me, to publish my pore travailes under your unoubted protection. Whom I
most humbly intreate, not onely in so iust a cause to pro-
tect me, but also in these Primordia of my studies, after
the accustomed prudence of the Philosophers, to con-
ferme with fauourable acceptaunce, and continuance as
the equitie of the caufe requireth. I haue set downe in
these fewe lines in my opinion (Right Worshipfull) the
image of a licentious Vflurer, and the collusions of dieu-
elifh incrochers, and heereunto was I led by two reasons:
First, that the offender seeing his owne counterfaite in
this Mirrour, might amend it, and those who are like
by overlauish profusenesse, to become meate for their
mouths, might be warned by this caueat to shunne the
Scorpion ere she deuoureth.

A. ij. May
The Epifle Dedicatorie.

May it please your Worshippe, to fauour my travailes, and to accept my good will: who incouraged by the successe of this my firstlings will heereafter in most humble signe of humanitie continue the pur-pose I haue begunne, commending the cause and my seruice to your good liking: who no doubt compassed with incompe-rable vertues, will commend when you see occasion, & not condemne with-out a cause.

Your VVorships in all dutie to commaund,

Thomas Lodge.
To the Right worshipful, my courteous friends, the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court,
Thomas Lodge of Lincolnes Inne Gentleman, wisheth prosperous success in their studies, and happy event in their travailes.

Vrteous Gentlemen, let it not seme strange vnto you, that hee which hath long time slept in silence, now beginneth publikely to salute you, since no doubt, my reasons that induce me hereunto be such, as both you may allowe of them, since they be well meant, and account of them since they tend to your profit. I haue publishe hereof set purpose a tried experience of worldly abuses, describing heerein not onely those monsters which were banished Athens, I meane Vlurers, but also such devouring caterpillers, who not onely haue fatted their fingers with many rich forfeitures, but also spread their venin among some priuate Gentleman of your profession, which considered, I thought good in opening the wound: to prevent an vlcer, and by counselling before escape, forewarn before the mischief. Led then by these perfwasions, I doubt not, but as I haue alwayes found you favourale, so now you will not cease to be friendly, both in protecting of this iust cause, from vnuest slander, and my perfon from that reproch, which, about two yeares since, an inuiorous cauiller objeicted against me: You that knowe me Gentlemen, can testifie that neyther my life hath bene so lewd, as ye my companie was odious, nor my behaviour so light, as that it shuld passe the limits of modestie: this notwithstanding a licenti-
The Epistle.

ous Hipponax, neither regarding the asperitie of the lawes touching slanderous Libellers, nor the offspring from whence I came, which is not contemptible, attempted, not only in publike & reprochfull terms to condemn me in his writings, but also so to slander me, as neither iustice shuld wink at so hainous an office, nor I pretermit a commodious reply. About three yeres ago one Stephen Gosson published a booke, intituled, The school of Abuse, in which having escaped in many & sundry conclusions, I as the occasion the fitted me, shapt him such an answer as beseeemed his discoursse, which by reason of the slenderness of ye subject (because it was in defence of plaies & play makers) ye godly & reverent ye had to deale in the cause, misliking it, forbade ye publishing, notwithstanding he comming by a private vnperfect-copye, about two yeres since, made a reply, diuiding it into five sectiores, & in his Epistle dedicatory, to ye right honorable, Sir Frances Walsingham, he impugneth me with these reproches, ye I am become a vagarāt person, visited by ye heuy hand of God, lighter then libertie, & looser the vanitie. At such time as I first came to ye sight herof (judge you gentlemen how hardly I could digest it) I bethought my selfe to frame an answere, but considering ye the labour was but loft, I gaue way to my misfortune, contenting my selfe to wait ye opportunitie wherein I might, not according to the impertinacie of the injurye, but as equity might countenance mee, cast a raine over the untaimed curtailes chapels, & wiping out the supposition of this slander from the remembrance of those ye knew me, not counsell this injurious Asinus to become more conformable in his reportes: and now Gentlemen having occasion to passe my trauailes in publike, I thought it not amisse somewhat to touch the slander, & proving it to be most wicked & discommendable, leave the rest to the discretion of those in authoritie, who if the Gentleman had not plaid bo peep thus long, would have taught him to have counted his cards a little better: and now Stephen Gosson
The Epistle.

For let me but familiarly reason with thee thus. Think'st thou ye in handling a good cause it is requisite to induce a false proposition, although thou wilt say it is a part of Rethorike to argue A Perseona, yet is it a practife of small honesty to conclude without occasion: if thy cause wer good, I doubt not but in so large & ample a discourse as thou hast to handle, thou mightest had left the honor of a gentleman inulolate. But thy base degree, subject to servile attempts, measureth all things according to cawelling capacitie, thinking because nature hath bestowed vpo thee a plausible discourse, thou maist in thy sweet termes present the lowrest & falsest reports ye cannot imagine; but it may be, ye as it fortuned to ye noble man of Ialy, it now fareth wth me, who as Petarch reported, gie greatly to ye entertained of strangers, & pleasure of the chase, respected not the braue & gorgeous garments of a courtier, but delighted in such clothing as seemed ye place where he sojourned, this noble gentleman returning on a time fro his game, found all his house furnished with strangers, on whom bestowing his accustomed welcome, he bent himself to ye overseeing of his domestical preparati, & coming to ye stable among the horse keepers of his new come guests, & apprehending one of them for faulting in his office, ye fellow impatient of reproofe, & measuring ye gentleman by his plaine coat, stroke him on the face, & turned him out of ye stable, but afterward attending on his matter, & perceiving him whom he had stroken to be ye Lord of ye house, he humbly curbed pard: ye gentleman as patient as pleasant, not only forgiving him ye escape, but pretely anwered thus, I blame not thee good fellow for thy outrage, but this companion, pointing to his coat, which hath made thee mistake my person. So at this instant esteeme I M. Goffon hath dealt with me, who not meduring me by my birth, but by ye subject I haedled like Will Summer striking him ye stood next him, hath vp-braided me in person, whe he had no quarrell, but to my cause, & therein pleaded his owne indiscreti, & loded me with
The Epistle.

with intollerable injurie. But if with Zopyus hee might kisse the gibet, or with Patacian hop headesse, the world thoulde beé ridde of an injurious flauderer, and that tongue laboured in suppositions, might be nailed vp as Tullies was for his Philipicall declamations. But good Stephen, in like forte will I deale with thee, as Philipp of Macedon with Nicanor, who not respecting the maiestie of the king, but giving himselfe over to the petulancie of his tongue vainly inueighed against him, whom notwithstanding Philip so cunningly handeled, that not onely he ceased the rumor of his report, but also made him as lauifh in commending, as once he was profuse in discommending: his attempt was thus performed, he feeing Nicanor sorely pressed with pouerty, relieved him to his content. Whereupon altering his coppie, and breaking out into singular commendation of Philip, the king concluded thus: Loe, curtesie can make of bad good, and of Nicanor an enimie, Nicanor a friend. Whose actions my reprouer, I will now fit to thee, who hauing flaudered me without cause, I will no otherwize reuenge it, but by this meanes, that now in publike I confess thou haft a good pen, and if thou keepe thy Methode in discoure, and leaue thy flandering without cause, there is no doubt but thou shalt beé commended for thy coppie, and praifed for thy stile. And thus desiring thee to measure thy reportes with iustice, and you good Gentlemen to anfwer in my behalfe if you heare me reproched. I leaue you to your pleasures, and for my selfe I will studie your profit.

Your loueing friend,
Thomas Lodge.
BARNABE RICH

Gentleman Souldier, in praise of the Author.

If that which warnes the young beware of vice,
And schooles the olde to shunne vnlawfull gaine,
If pleafant ftile and method may suffice,
I thinke thy trauaile merits thanks for paine,
My fimple doome is thus in tearmes as plaine:
That both the subiect and thy ftile is good,
Thou needs not feare the scoffes of Momus brood.

If thus it be, good Lodge continue ftill,
Thou needft not feare Gofe fonne or Ganders hiffe,
Whose rude reportes past from a flaundrous quill,
Will be determinded but in reading this,
Of whom the wifere fort will thinke amis,
To flaundre him whose birth and life is such,
As fafle report his name can neuer tuch.

JOHN IONES GENTLEMAN, in praise of the AUTHOR.

Though not my praise, yet let my wish preuaile,
Who fo thou be that lift to read this booke,
I neuer yet by flatterie did aflaile,
To count that good that moft did please my looke.

But
But alwaies wisht my friends such stile to vse,
   As wise might like, though foolish would refuse.
In opening vice my friend who spends his time,
   May count by private good no profit lost,
What errors scape in young and lustie prime,
   Experience (badge of truth) may quickly cost.
Who sets the marke, that makes men shunne the sand,
   Deferves good words, his proofes for profit stand.

For common good to crosse a few mens vaines,
   Who like to Midas would that all were golde,
I count not misse, since there vnlawfull gaines
   Makes some men sink, whom birth might well uphold.
I know the fore, the scarre is seene to plaine,
   A blessed state where no such wils doo raine.

In briefe, I praise this booke for pretie stile.
   For pithie matter, Gentle be thou judge,
O would my wish some fancies might beguile,
   Then faire reuenewes shold not fit a snudge.
A world to see how Asses daunce in golde,
   By wanton wils, when Gentiles starue for colde.

Whose errors if it please succeeding age,
   To see with sighs, and shun with sad advice,
Let him beholde this booke, within whose page,
   Experience leaues her chiefest proofes of price.
And thanke the youth that suffered all these toiles,
   To warne thee shun that rocke which many spoiles.

FINIS.
Gentlemen, since the press cannot passe without escape, and some things are so mistaken, as without correction they will be very gresse. May it please you when you read to correct, especially, such principall errors as these that followe.

Folio. 30. b. Line. 4. For woed, Read wonne.
Folio. eod. Line. 8. For colde, Read cloudes.
Folio. eod. Line. 15. For showde, Read shoard.
Folio. eod. Line. 30. For concluding, Read concluded.
Foli. 31. a. Lin. 34. For presents a secrets méeete, Read wth séeemly secret gréeete.

For the rest I referre them to your discretion, who can distinguishe coulours, and either better, or fit words to your fantasies.

* * *

Your friend:
Thomas Lodge.
AN ALARVM
against Vsurers.

O maruell though the wise man accompted all things vnder the sun vain, since the cheefeest creatures be mortall: and no wonder though the world runne at randon, since iniquitie in these later dayes hath the vpper hand. The alteration of states if they be looke into, and the overthrow of houses, if they be but easely laid in open viewe, what eye would not shed teares to see things so transtoriorie? and what wisedome woulde not endeavour to dissole the inconuenience?

There is a state within this our Common wealth, which though it necessarily stand as a piller of defence in this royall Realme, yet such are the abuses that are grown in it, that not onely the name is become odious by fomes errour, but also if the thing be not narrowly looke into, the whole lande by that meanes will grow into great inconuenience: I meane the state of Merchants, who though to publyke commoditie they bring in store of wealth from forrein Nations, yet such are their domesticall practises, that not only they inrich themselues mightelye by others misfortunes, but also eate our Engliish Gentrie out of house and home. The generall facultie in it selfe, is both auncient and lawdable, the professours honest and vertuous, their actions full of daunger, and therefore worthy gaine, and so necessary,
An Alarum.

cesfarye this sorte of men be, as no well gouerned state may be without them.

But as among a tree of fruite there bée some withered fallings, and as among wholesome hearbes there growes some bitter Colloquintida; so it cannot be, but among such a number of Marchaunts, there shoulde bée some, that degenerate from the true name and nature of Marchaunts. Of these men I write, and of none other, my inuectiue is priuate, I will not write generall: and were it not I respeect the publique commoditie more then my priuate prayfe, this matter shoulde haue slepte in hugger mugger. Of these vngracious men I write, who hauing nothing of themselves, yet greedelye graspe all things into their owne handes.

These be they that finde out collusions for Statutes, and compass lande with commoditie, these bée the boulsterers of vngracious pettie Brokers: and by these men (the more is the pittie) the prifons are replenished with young Gentlemen: These bée they, that make the Father carefull, the mother sorrowfull, the Sonne desperate: These bée they that make crooked straight, and straight crooked, that can clofe with a young youth, while they coufen him, and feede his humours, till they freé him of his Farmes. In briefe, such they bée, that clofe most fayre then, when they imagine the worst, and vnlesse they bée quicklye knownen, they easelye will make bare some of the best of our young Heires that are not yet stayed: whome zealoulye I beseech to ouer-looke this my writing: for what is fette downe heere, eyther as an eye witnesse I will auowe, or informed euyn by those Gentlemen, who haue swallowed the Gudgen, and haue bene intangleed in the hooke, I haue approouedlye fette downe.

Such
Such bée thofe sorte of men, that their beginning
is of naught, sette vp by the devotion of some honest
Marchauntes, of whom taking vp their refuse com-
moditie, they imploye it to this vngodly and vnhonest
purpofe.

They finde out (according to theyr owne vayne)
some olde soaking vndermining Solicitor, whom
they both furnish with money and expence, to sette
him foorth, and gette him more creditte: This good
fellowe muft haunte Ordinaryes, canuaffe vp and
downe Powles, and as the Catte watcheth the praye
of the Mouse, fo dilygentlye intends hée to the com-
paffing of some young Nouice, whom by Fortune
eyther hée findeth in melancholyke passions at the
Ordinary, or at penniflesse devotion in Powles, or
perhappes is brought acquaynted with him by some
of his owne brotherhoode. Him he handeleth in these
or such lyke tearmes, both noting place and circum-
ftaunce.

Entleman, why bée you so melancholye? Howe
falleth it out, that you are not more lyghtfome?
Your young yeares me thoughtes shoule loathe such
sollome aspects, I maye not anye waye imagine a
cause why you shoule bee pensiue: you haue good
Parentes, you want no friendes, and more, you
haue lyuelyhoodes, which considered, trulye you
committe meere follye to bée so meruaylouslye sadde
and wonderfullye sorrowfull, where you haue no oc-
casion.

If you want money, you haue creditte, (a gift
which who so euer inioyeth nowe a dayes, hée is
able to compass anye thing: and for that I sée so
good a nature in you, (if proffered seruice stinke
not) I will verye willynglye (if so bée you will open
your
An Alarum

your estate to me) further you in what I may, and perhaps you shall finde your selfe fortunate, in falling into my company.

The young Gentleman, vnaquainted with such like discourses, counting all golde that glysters, and him a faithfull friend that hath a flattering tongue, opens all his minde to this subtill underminer, who so wringeth him at last, that there is no secrete corner in the poore Gentlemans heart, but he knoweth it: after that, framing his behaupour to the nature of the youth, if he be fad, sober: if youthly, riotous: if lasciuious, wanton: he laboureth so much, that at last the birde is caught in the pit-fall, and perceiving the vaine of the youth, he promiseth him some reliefe by his meanes: the Gentleman thinking he hath God almightie by the heele, holdes the Diuell by the toe, and by this meanes, is brought to utter wracke and ruine. The Broker furnished of his purpose, hauing learned the Gentlemans name, lodging, want, & welth: & finding all things correspondent to his purpose, hies him to his fetter vp, who reioyceth greatly at his good happe, and rewards this wicked seducer with a pence of gold. To be briefe, at first ifue on the Gentlemans bonde, this broking knaue receiues fortie or fiftie poundes of course commoditie, making him beleue, that by other meanes monie maye not be had, and swearing to him, that there will be great losse, and that he could with the Gentleman would rather refuse then take. But the youth not esteeming the losse, so hee supplye his lacke, sets him forward, and giues the willing Iade the spurre, who finding all things meate in the mouth, makes sale of this Marchandize to some one of his greatest fraternitie, and if it be fortie, the youth hath a good peniworth if in ready money he receive twentie pound, and yet the money repayable at three moneths ende. The Broker in this matter, getteth double fee of the Gentleman, treble
treble gaine in the sale of the commoditie, and more, a thousand thankes of this diuellish Vfurer. Truly Gentlemen, it is wonderfull to conceiue, (yet are there some of you can tell if I lie) how this Sicophant that helpt our youth to get, now learneth him to spend: What faith he? my young mafter, what make you with this olde Satten doublet? it is foilde, it is vnsit for a Gentlemans wearing, apparell your selfe as you shoulde beé, and ere fewe dayes passe, I will acquaint you with as braue a dame a friend of mine, as euer you knew. Oh how sweete a face hath she, and thus dilating it with rethoricall praisés, to make the Gentleman more passionate, it fallith out that the mand Fawlcon stoops to lure, and all things are fullfilled according to his Brokers direction. Promifes are kept on both partes, and my youth is brought acquainted with Mistres Minxe: this harlot is an old beaten dogge, and a maintainer of the brothell house brotherhoode, a stale for young nouifes, and a limme of Sathan himselfe, whose behauiors and iestures are such, as the world cannot imagine better, if the Gentleman weep, she wil waile: if he forrow, she will sigh: if he be merrie, she will not be modest. To conclude, her lesson is so taught her, as she can recken without booke: Lorde what riotousnesse passeth in apparell, what lauifhnesse in banketting, what loftyenesse in liuing, and in verie short space, our youth which was fligge, is nowe at leake, his purse is emptie, and his mistres begins to lowre, which he per- ceiuing, & earnestly bent to continue his credit with his Curtifan, comes to his vngratious Broker, whom with faire tearmes he desireth, and with humble suites more earnestly beseecheth to further his credite in what hee may. Who seeing which way the Hare windeth, begins to blame him of his liberaliti, and yet only is the cause of his spending, and after a few priue nipes, bearing shew of good meaning, but yet indeed his way is to trie conclu-
An Alarum

conclusions, hee hasteth to the principall his good master Merchant, whom he findeth altogether prompt & ready at a becke, to send abroad his refuse commoditye for crackt angels: which conclusio is betwene the both may easily be imagined, but ye end is this, ye Broker returns to my solitarie youth, & recountes vnto him, first to make him feareful, how many places he hath ben at, when he hath not visited one, how many he hath desired, yet how few are redie to pleure, at laft he breketh out, & telleth him ye whole, assuring him ye he is to think wel of his master scrape-peonie ye vnderer, who is willing in hope of his wel doing to let him haue once more of his incomodiouse commoditie, vpon resoable assurance. To be briefe, ye bargain is quickly beaten out, ye broker laieth ye losse, ye gentlemans etemeth not so his need be sorded, ye Merchant laughs at his folly in his ileene, & to conclude, ye bonds are delivered, ye cursed commoditie received, & at this second mart, how speeds our yoncker think you? perhaps of 50. pounds in ware, he receiuethe 30. pounds in ready money, & yet ye money repayable at three months end. O incredible & iniurious dealings, O more then Judaicall cousonage, truely Gentlemen this that I write is true, I my selfe knowe the paymaster, naie more, I my selfe know certainly, that by name I can recken among you some, that haue ben bitten, who left good portiouns by their parents, & faire landes by their auncestors, are desolate now, not hauing friends to relieve them, or money to amày their charges. A miserable and wretched state is this, full of inconuenience, when such eie fores are not seene in a common weale, when such abuses are winked at, when such desolation is not perceiued, & wonderfull it is, ye among so many godly lawes, made for ye administrition of justice, ther be none found out: for these couetous malefactors, purchased arms now, possesse ye place of ancient progenitors, & men made rich by yooug youths misspedings, doe feast in ye halls of our riotous young spend thrifts.

It
against usurers.

It will be answered, it is ye gentlemen's own folly, & I graunt it, yet of their folly who should bear the blame? truely the bier, who hauing experience to couin, might haue also conscience to forbear the: nay among ye rabble-mêt of such as we find to haue falne in their youth, how many experienced men find we at yeares of discretion? who hauing only ye name of gentrie left the to promote them to honor, & finding no releése any way, are inforced either in forren coutries to end their liues miserably or desperatly, some more vngratious, are a pray for ye gal-lous, choosing rather to die with infamie, then to liue to beg in miferie. But to leaue this to his place, & to returne fro whence we haue digressed. Our gentlemâ hauing got new supplie, is pricked on to new sinne, & the minifter of ye diuel seruing at his elbow, perswades him to new change, for varietie faith he, is meruelously to be admitted of, especially in such cauases: & withall brings him to a new gamester, a wittie worldling, who more cunningly can handle him the ye first, & hath more shiifts of descant for his plain song, (but this by ye way is to be noted, ye the broker hath his part of ye gaines with ye curtifan, & the cosins for them both,) this miniô to traineth our seduced youth in folly, as not only himselfe is at her command, but also his substance remaineth to her vse, this high prised comoditie is imploied to ye curtifans braue-ry, & he which makes him brutifih in behauior, doth emty his replenished purse: thus ye eie of refon is closed vp by sensualitie, & the gifts of nature are diminishd, by ye disordinate vflage of beastly venery. Supplies are sought for evry way, by his wicked broker, to bring him to ru-ine, & to work his utter confusiô. Thus, thus, alas, ye father before his eies, & in his elder yeares, beholdeth as in a mirror, ye defolation of his owne house, and hearing of the profusenesse of his vngratious sonne, calleth him home, rebuketh him of his error, and requesteth account of his money misspended: Hée (taught and instructed
An Alason

sufficiently to coulour his follie by his vngodly mis-
stres, and cursed misleader) at his retourne to his father,
maketh shewe of all honestie, so that the olde man lead
by naturall affection, is almost persuaded that ye truth
is vntruth: yet remembring the priuie conclauance of
his youthly yeares, & demeaning the incident to his young
sonne, he discourseth with him thus.

O my sonne, if thou knewest thy Fathers care, and
wouldst aunfere it with thy well doing, I might
have hope of the continuance of my progeny, & thou be
a joy to my aged yeres. But I feare me the eyes of thy
reason are blinded, so neither thy fathers teares maye
perswade thee, nor thine owne follies laide open before
thine eyes, reduce thee, but that my name shall cease in
thee, and other couetous vnderminers shall enjoye the
fruites of my long labours. How tenderly good boye in
thy mothers lyfe waft thou cherished? How deere
deloved? How well instructed? Did I euer entice thee to
vice? Nay rather enforced I thee not to louse vertue?
And whence commeth it that all these good instructi-
ions are swalowed vp by one sea of thy follie? In the
Vniuersitides thy wit was praifed, for that it was preg-
nant, thy preferment great, for that thou defueredst it,
so that before God I did imagine, that my honour shuld
haue beginning in thee alone, and be continued by thy
offspring, but beeing by mee brought to the Innes of
Court, a place of abode for our English Gentrie, and the
only nurferie of true lerning, I finde thy nature quite
altered, and where thou first shuldest haue learnt law,
thou art become lawleffe: Thy modest attire is become
immodest brauerie, thy shamefast feemelynes, to shame-
leffe impudencie: thy desire of lerning, to loitering loue:
and from a sworne foulder of the Muses, thou art be-
come a master in the vniuersitie of loue, & where thou
knowest not anie waie to get, yet fearest thou not out-
ragiously to spend. Report, nay true report, hath made
me
against usurers.

me priuie to many of thy escapes, which as a Father though I couer, yet as a good father, tenderly I will re-
buke. Thy portion by yeare from me, is standing fortie
pounds, which of it selves is sufficient both to maintaine
you honestly and cleanly: besides this, you are growne
in Arrerages within this two yeares no lesse then 100.
pound, which if thou wilt looke into, is sufficiët for threé
whole yeres to maintaine an honest familie. Now how
haft thou spent this, forsooth in apparell, and that is the
aptest excuse: and lauishnesse in that, is as discommen-
dable as in anie other, if in apparell thou passe thy
boundes, what make men of theee? A prodigall proude
foole, and as many fashions as they see in theee, so manie
frumpes will they affoord theee, counting theee to carrye
more bombast about thy belly, then wit in thy head.
Naye my sonne, mufe not upon the worlde, for that
will but flatter theee, but weigh the judgement of God,
and let that terrifie theee, and let not that which is the
cause of pride, nussell theee vp as an instruement of
Gods wrathfull indignation. What account reapes a
young man by braue attire? Of the wife he is counted
riotous, of the flatterer, a man easily to be seduced, and
where one will afford theee praise, a thousand will call
thee proud, the gretest reward of thy brauerie is this, see
yonder goes a gallant Gentleman: and count you this
praise worth ten score pounds? Truely sonne, it is bet-
ter to be accounted wittie, then wealthy, and righteous,
then rich, praise laffeth for a moment that is grounded
on shewes, and fame remaineth after death, that procé-
deth of good substaunce: choose whether thou wilt bee in-
famous with Erosíratus, or renowned with Aristides,
by one thou shalt beare the name of a Sacriedge, by
the other, the title of Iust, the first maye flatter theee
with similitude, the last will honour theee indeede, and
more, when thou art dead. Sonne, sonne, giue eare to
thy Fathers instructions, and grounde them in thy
heart,
An Alarum

heart, so shalt thou bee blessed among the elders, and be an eye fore vnto thy enimies. A second grieue, nay more, a corafiu to my heart (young man) is this, you are both prodigall in apparell, and in life, and vngracious and vngrudly curtifans, (as I understand) are become the mistres of your masterhip: & thinkest thou this report could come to thy Fathers eare, and not grieue him? Sonne, I had rather thou shouldest bee accounted foolish then amorous, for the one may be borne withall, the other is most odious. Incontinencie (yong man) is ye root of all inconuenience, it dulleth the memorie, decayeth the bodie, and periffeth the bones, it makethstedsft fickle, beautifull deformed, and vertuous vicious: it impayreth mans credit, it detracteth from his honour, and shortheth his daies, a harlots house is the gate of hell, into the which whosoever entereth, his virtues doe become vices, his agilitie is growne to flouthfulnesse, and from the child of grace, he is made the bondlaue of perdition. The wisest by lewde louse are made foolish, the mightiest by lust are become effeminate, the stoutest Monarkes to miserable mecockes. I wot well (my child) that chast louse is necessarie, but I know (my sonne) that lecherie is horrible. A harlots wanton eie is the lure of the diuell, her faire speeches, the snares of sin, & the more thou delightest in her companie, ye more heapest thou the wrath of God against thy selfe: Let Lais looke neuer so demurely, yet Lais is Lais, measure not thy liking by lookes, for there be some holy diuells: to bee briefe, the end is this, he is best at ease that least meddleth with anie of them. Demosthenes will not buie repentance so dere, as with high summes to purchase tranitorie pleasures, and I had rather thou shouldest learne of a Philosopher, then bee instructed by thy owne fancie, marke this axiome, there is no vertue which is odious after it is attained to, but the pleasures of louse are then most loathsome, when they are determined: and therefore
fore no vertues: and to conclude, not to be sought after. It is idleneffe my sonne, that seduceth thee, for the minde that is well occupedd, neuer finneth. When thou enterprisest anie thinges, mesure thine owne fortune by other mens successse: as thou considerest of theyr ends, so imagine of thine owne. Thinke with thy selfe the wiseft haue fallen by loue, as Salomon, the richeft, as Anthonie, the proudest, as Cleopatra, the strongest, as Sampson, and by how many degrees they did exceede thee, by so many circumstancies preuent thy ruine. It is enowth for fillie Birdes to be lead by the call of the Fowler, and for men it is most conuenient to flie apparent goods, & sticke to that which is indeede. Though thine eie perfwade thee the woman is beautifull, yet let thy experience teach thee, thee is a Curtifan, and wilt thou esteeme of painted Sepulchres, when thou knowest certaine and determined substances? Doe we buie ought for the fairenesse or goodnesse? Spangled Hobbie horfes are for children, but men must respecke things which be of value indeede. I imploie my money uppon thee, not to the vse thou shouldest be leuwd, but for that I woulde haue thee learned. It gréeueth mee to heare reportes of thy compagnie keepinge, for where thou offendeft in the two formost, thou art altogether nulled in this, and truelye I can not but meruayle at thee, that beeing borne reasonable, to make election, thou art so vantoward in picking out thy choice: Agreé light and darkenesse? Or the Ichnewmon with the Aphis? Doeth the Wëesell loue the Cockatrice? Or gentle borne, such as be vngratious? No my Sonne, broking bugges are not companions for continent Courtyers: for who so eyther accompanyeth them, is eyther accounted a spende thrifte, or one that is Sir Iohn Lacke lande, eyther of their fraternitie, or else a verie foole.

C. ij. Finde
An Alarum

Finde me out anie one of them, that in thy aduerâtie will helpe thée, or in thy misdemeanor aduise thée. Nay, such they are, as will rather binde thée prentice with Sathen, then exhort thée to eschew finne. They bée the Caterpillers of a Common weale, the sting of the Ad-der, nay, the priuie foes of all Gentry, and such they be, that if they get, they care not how vngodly, and if they cousen, they care not how commonly: So that thée vi-ces haue nowe taken hold of thée, fyrst prodigalitie, the enimie to continencie, next lasciouruifesse, the enimie of sobrietie, and thirdly ill company, the decayers of thy honestie. The means to auoyde these euills are mani-fest but they must be followed: it is not sufficient to knowe a fault, but it is wisedome to amend it: Humble thy heart (my sonne) to the higheft, and the more thou considerest of him, the leffe wilt thou care for this fleth: For what is the body better by the gay rayment? truly no more then ye foule is by superfluous zeale, for as the one is foolish, so is the other franticke. Leaue luft, leaft it losse thée, vie chaft delights for they will comfort thée, it is better driuing a toye out of memorie by reading a good lesson, then by idlenesse to commit an errour, which is fawced with repentaunce. Of nedlesse euills make no accompl, ye leffe you accompany ye worft, the more wil you be sought to by the best. Easie is it to fay well, but the vertue is to doo well: O my deere childe, as thy frend I exhort thée, and as thy louing father I command thée, to consider of the tender care I haue of thée, and to im-ply all thy indeuours now to my comfort: if thou haft runne away, call thy selfe home, and waye within thy heart the reward both of vertue, and the discrédite by vice, fo the honour of the one will incite thée, the infamy of the other will deterre thée. For thofe debts that haue overpast thée, in hope of amendemet I will fée them satisfied, and if heereafter thou fall into the lyke lurch, I promise thée this, that as now I deale with thée as a fa-

24
ther, so then will I accompt of thée as a reprobate. Thou feest fire and water before thée, chuse to thy liking: in dooing well, I will rejoyce in thée, in dealing otherwise, I will nothing account of thée.

The father with teares hauing ended this his exhortarie, is aunswered in humble fort of his dissembling sonne, thus.

Whatsoever (good father) hath passed, is irreuocable, but what is to come may be considered of: it is naturall in me to fall, and vertuous to recouer my selfe. I confesse good sir, I am guiltie of errour, and haue faulted highlye, yet not so greatlye as you intame: the world now a dayes is rather bent to aggrauate then to couer escapes. Wherefore, as the first step to amendment is repentance, so (deare father) I am forrie for that is past, and most earnestly request you to continue your favoour, and no doubt but your sonne shall behaue himselfe herafter to your comfort.

The father delighted with his sonnes discrète and humble aunswere, conceiueth hope of amendment, and returneth him to the Innes of the Court againe, and setting him on free foote, exhorteth him to follow vertue, and intentiuely to long after learning. But he, whose heart was pliable to receive all impressions, no sooner is out of the view of his fathers house, but began to forget his olde promifes, and renewes the remembrance of his mistresse, deuising by the way how to delight her, and what futes to prouide that may satisfie her. To be briefe, being returned to London, and quit of his fathers servants, (vy newes of his arriuall being blazed abroad) his Broker in post haft comes and salutes him, his mistresse by tokens and s gente letters greetes him, hee maketh his marchant joyfull in the receipt of the money, and mistresse Minxe merrie for the returne of her young copefmate.

To be briefe, in post haft he posteth to her chamber,

C. iiij. where
An Alarum

where Lord what friendly greetings passe, what amorous regards, how the blameth him of his delaye, and with fained tears watereth his youthful face, howe she sweares that she is constant, and yet a curstian: howe she vowes she is continent, and yet common: truly it were a matter to make a Comedie on, to see both their actions, and to note their discourses: their needs not many or long sermons on this, master Brokers help in short space is sought for: for the money my youths father gaue him, hath bought his mistresse a suite of the new fashion. The Broker readie at a becke, without delay furniseth him with money: it is lamentable to report every loss, and sith in another place I meane to set them downe, I will not motion them here. In short space, our Marchant beginneth to looke after more assurance, and where to fore he was content with obligation, he now hunteth after statutes. (This kind of bond Gentlemen is well knowen among you, the vfurers by this time have build maner houses upon some of your lyuellihoods: and you have lost that for little, which will not be recoverd with much.) The force whereof our youth considering not, so he have foyfon of money: the world to be short, at the last falleth out thus, both land, mony, & all possibilities, either by father or friends, are incroched upon, by this gentle master Scraper-pany, so that now our youth finding neither suretie nor similitude, by his flattering vfurers is layd vp close for escaping. Let him write to his hufwife Mistresse Minxe, she disdaineth him: let him intreate the Broker he refuseth him, let him make fute to the vfurers, he faith be not confen him: thus (this Gentleman that neither by his fathers counsell woulde refuse, nor by his owne experience be perswaded, to auoyde the eminent daunger that hanged over his head, is brought to confusion, and those friends that fawned on him before in prosperitie, now frowne at him in his aduerfitie, those that
against Vurers.

that depended with flattering words in time of wealth on his finding, now altogether disdaine him that cannot finde himselfe. Loe Gentlemen what it is to winke at good counsell, and to preferre young attempts before old experience: sée heere the fruites of contempt, and lette thesle feres eyu to looke into: had this Gentleman regarded advice, had he considered of his estate, himselfe had bene at libertie, his friends in quiet. But (alas the while) our heires now a dayes haue running heads, which makes their parents abounde in teares: sone are led with nouelties in forreigne Nations, sone with prodigalitie in their owne Countrey: sone with pride, the first fruites of all impietie: sone by loue, the ladie of loosenesse. If one hunteth after vertue, how many hundreds doo dayly practisse vice? Let the experience of this young Nouice (my youthly countrey men) make you warie, and sée but into this one parcell of his lyfe, and giue your judgement of his misfortune: his wit was sufficient to conceiue vertue, yet knowing (with Medea) the beaste, he headlong runne to the worst. Natures giftes are to be vfed by direction: he had learning, but hee applied it ill: he hadde knowledge, but hee blinded it with selle opinion. All graces whatsoever, all ornaments what so they be, either giuen vs by our fore-parent, or grafteed in vs by experience, are in themselves as nothing: vnlesse they be ordered by the power of the most higheste. What care conceiue you, may be comperable to this young Gentlemans fathers sorrow? who sith his house pluckte ouer his head: his sone imprisoned to his greate discredite, and the vfuruer the onely gainer, and yet the most vilest perfon.

Nowe, what becommeth of our youth thinke you? his Father refuseth him, dispossessing the ryghte heyre of what hee maye, and poore hee is lefte desolate and afflicted in prison. And in these dayes how many are infected with this desperate diseafe, Gentlemen judge
An Alarum

Judge you, I my selfe with teares haue heard some pri-
vie complaints, and lamented my friends misfortunes,
false so sodainly. My good friends ye are hereafter to en-
ter into this world, looke on this glasse: it wil shew you
no counterfait, but the true image of a rebellious sonne,
and the rewarde of contempt of parents, account your
felues happie to learne by others experience, and not to
be pertakers of the actuall sorowe: Obey your pa-
rents, for they loue you, truft not to straungers, for they
will vnpriade you of their beneite, it is better to haue
the stripes of a friend, then the kissses of a flatterer. Pla-
to would haue young men to looke in the glasse, for two
causes, the one, that if they founde themselues beauty-
full in vilage, and of exquiste figure, they might inde-
uer to make the vertues of their minde, answerable to
the liniaments of the bodie: the other, that if they found
themselves of deformed shape, they should seeke to beau-
tifie the same by the inward perfections of the minde, &
for two causes my good friends, would I wish you to
consider of this mans fall, and read his misfortune: the
one, that not being yet nipped, you may preuent: the oth-
er, that being but yet a little galled, you would holde
backe.

Eo virtus placidis abstinuisse bonis.

As the Loadstone draweth yron, so let good counsaile
conquere your affections, as the Theamides of Aegypt
driueth awaie yron, so let the feare of God dispell all
worldly pleasures: If a simple man fall to decay, it may
be borne withall, if a man of wisdome grow in arre-
rages, may we not blame his follicie? It is better to bee
enuied then pittyed, for thou art pitted alwaies in mi-
fortune, but enuied at time of thy prosperitie. To bee
briefe (Gentlemen) overlooke this aduisedly, & you shall
finde many things worthy the noting, and no few mat-
ters written for your commodoite. This miserable young
man, overwhelmed thus on euerie side with manifolde
and
against Vsurers.

and sundry cares, beholding his most vnfortunate state, in woffull termes in the prifon house breketh into these complaints.

Alas vnhappy wretch that I am, that having a good father that did cherish me, a tried mother that tenderly nourished me, many friends to accomanie me, faire reuenewes to inrich me: haue heaped sorrowe on my owne head by my Fathers displeasure, refused of my friends for my misdemeanour, & dispossessed of my land by my prodigallitie. O inceftuous luft that enterest the hart, & consumest the bones, why followed I thee? & O vngodly pleasure why didst thou flatter me? O wicked and vngracious man that haft vndone me, and woe be vnto thee (vile wretch) that in my miserie doest thus leaue me. What shall become of me poore wretch? faine now would I begge that bread, which vainlye I haue spent: now too too late doo I see, that fainednesse is no faith, and he that trustes to this world, cleaues to a broken staffe. Alas, how shoulde I attaine to libertie? or by what meanes may I escape my confusion? My Father hath accepted of another fonne, and all by reaon of my lewdnesse: O that I had respecked his vnfained teares, O that I had accepted his good aduice, O that I had re- jected my flattering friends. But I see no hope is lefte me, my creditour is too cruell, yet hath he coustoned me: and faine would I be his bond mlaue, woulde he release me: but since no hope is lefte me of reouerie of my E-state, I referre my caufe to God, who as he will remit my offence, so will he redresse my miserie and grieve.

Whilest in these or such like tearmes, the poore young man bewayles his heauie happe, sodainly enters his cousoning creditour, and in outwarde shew bewailyng his misfortune, yet in very truth the onely originall cause of his destruction, comforteth him in these or such like termes.

Gentleman, the exigent and extremitie that you are now
An Alarum

now at, though it be most tedious vnto you, it is most lamentable in my opinion. These young yeeres to taste of sorrowe so foone, is strange, considering all circumstaunces: but since the cause proceeded of your owne lewd misspending, mine be the losse in part, but the greter must your affliction be. I hoping of your well doing, neither denied your pleasure nor profite, yet in liue and recompence of all, I finde ioft nothing: a few subscribed papers I haue, and some money I haue receyued, but nothing to my principall, and yet notwithstanding so favourble wil I be vnto you, as if you procure me any one furetie I will releafe you. To leafe my mooney I were loath, and to keepe you heree it were more loathsome. I wold doo all for the best, not hindering my selfe, so you would straine your selfe to satififie me somewhat.

The Gentleman knowing in himselfe his vnbility, beginneth in truth to open his state, protesting, that neither of himselfe, nor by any one at the present he is to doo any thing, no not so much as if he released him to pay his charges, such is his miserie, in that all his frends had giuen him ouer, wherevpon most humbly he beseecheth him, to way his cause, promising any seruice what so euer may be: if so be it wil please him to set him fre. Mas viurer smelling out the disposition of the youth, beginnes to bring him to his bowe after this fort.

The world at these dayes is such (my friende) as there is small respect had of those which haue nought, and great honour attributed vnto them, that will most netherly looke to themselves: which I perceiving, haue giuen my selfe (as naturally men are inclined to seke after glory) to the hoording vp of riches, to the end that my posteritie might be raised vp, and my fathers name (which as yet is of no accompt) might by my meanes become worshipfull. To perfourmaunce of this, trulye
against usurers.

I haue neither ben idle nor euill occupied: my thoughts haue wholly bene set of gettings, and who so nowe a dayes hath not the like meaning, his purpose will grow to small effect. And though of my selfe, I doo what I may, yet (as it is necessary) I must haue ministers, wher by that which I looke for may be brought to my hands: otherwise, my stocke might lye without vfaunce to my vther vndooin. Wherevpon, if thou wilt followe my direction and be ruled by my counsell, I will release thée of prifon, and set thée at libertie: restore thée to thy wonted credite, and countenaunce thée with my coyne, so that in shorte space thou maist haue money in thy pursle, and other necessaries to set thée vp agaie. Thou seest that now thou art miferable, but I will make thée fortunate: thou now art almost foodlesse, by me thou shalt be satisfied with the best: thy friends now disdain thée, the day shall come that they shall seke to thée: now art thou without apparell, through me thou shalt bee costlye attired: naye, what pleasure soever thou shalt either imagine for thy preferment, or wish for to doo thée good, thou shalt both finde me ready to performe it, and friendly to continue it.

The Gentleman surprisèd with this sodaine joye, and vnacquainted good speaches (not dreading that the Serpent laye hidden in the grasse) most willinglye aflected, promising to the aduenture of his lyfe, (to his creditour would be his wordes mafter,) to doo his deaouour to perfourme his will, as hée ought to doo. The Vlurer seing the minde of his prifoner, precise-lye bent to doo his commaunde, openeth his heart vnto him thus.

Gentleman, for that I haue an opinion of your honestye, and truuste in your secrecye: I will open vnto you my minde, and according as I finde your aunswered, I will shape your deliuerance. Such time D. ij. as
An Alarum

as you were at libertie, you know you had acquaintance with manye Gentlemen, and they not of the meanest: who at sometimes as well as your selfe were destitute of siluer: such as those be you must finde out for me, I will deleyuer you presentlie: apparayle you in print, give you money in your purse, and at suche an Ordarye shall you ly, where the greatest reforte is: your behavioure and vsage towards all men must be verye honefr, especiallie in all causes looke into the natures of men. If you spie out any one Gentleman pensue, enter into discours with him, if you maye perceiue, that either by parentage or possefion, hee is worthie credite, laye holde on him, feede him with money if he want, and (as though it proceeded of your own good nature) profer him to be bound for him: if he accept your offer, come to me, I will furnish him: nowe you may deuide the commoditie or the money between you, and out of your part (considering me after the bigness of the summe) take the rest for your owne fee: which if you looke into, in a yeare will growe vnto no small summe. This is the Load-stone must lead you: and by all meanes you must fashion your selfe to feede humours: this is an honest means to lyue by, this is a way to libertie, by this you may pleasure your selfe: and to conclude in doing this, you maye mightelye in short space inrich me. When you haue found out one fit to your vaine, remember this lesson, that what so ever vauntage you get of him, either for me, or for your self, care not how little paper and inke he can shewe of yours, kéepe still your owne ftake cléere. In these matters you must be verie circumspect, for there be now a daies such vnderminers start vp, that scarce a man can imagine his owne profit but they preach it a broad, and laye it open. Thus doo you fée whereto you must truft: howe faye you nowe, will you be content to doo this.

The
against usurers.

The young man aunswereth, Good sir, there is nothing that you haue sayde that by mee shall anie wyyes be forgotten, I am readie and willing to put in practise what you haue taught, and no doubt you shal finde me so diligent, y' your selfe shal say, you were happie in putting me in truft. In briefe the conclusion is this, the v insurer glad of this new Gentleman broker, dischargeth him, sets him a floate: now who so braue as our late prissoner, or who so frolicke? The olde forrowes are forgotten, and new inuention to cousin, posseffe the receptacle of his reafon. His olde acquaintaunce flocke about him, some reioycing at his recouered libertie, some wondering at his sodaine brauerie, yet fewe suspecting his pretended and hidden knauerie. Of them some he saluteth humblye, some ordinarilye, he was not so well instructed, but it is as well performed. Now who but our Gentleman is a companion for the best, and a cousiner of the moft, he staies not long before he be prouied of a praie, whom he so ordereth, as himselfe is pertaker of y' halfe, though the other be paymaster of the whole, and as thofe that are in the heate and extremitie of an ague, desyre drink to satisfy their drought: so this young gentleman that is brought into bondes by one confining spend thrift, hauing once entered foote in the high waie of prodigalitie, continueth headlong his course to his owne confusion. But by the way it is to be noted, that this Gentleman which is brought into the laps by our late prisioner, hath his posseffion & portion alotted him, so that our v insurer & his mate worke vpon sure groundes. Two or threee Obligations and commodities receiued, our v insurer grows to new deuifes, and sets his schollers to practise them, faith he, I must now haue you learne, to bring in this your friend to paye your debtes, and by this means you shal bring it about, you shal when next time he shal demand your helpe, tell him that of me there will be had no money before your olde bondes

D. iij.
An Alarum

be canceled, so that vnleffe he deale with me, by some
means to acquit that, it is vnpossible to attaine vn
to anie farther supplie. You may alleadge vn to him howe
in such like extremeties you haue stucke, and will sticke
vn to him, and desire him in fo easie a request he wil not
leauue you destitute, by this meanes shall you be rid of
your olde debts, and be as free from inconueniencie as e-
er you wer. No sooner hath our seducer learnt this lef-
son, but forth he trudgeth to find out this young master,
if possible may be, if so be he as yet be stored, he doth ei-
ther make him spend it or lend it, & vpō his new request
of supply, openeth vn to him all the circumstance which
before he had learned, & fo cunningly handleth him, that
the Gentleman desirous of money is easiely content.
Whereupon the matter is handeled thus betwixt the
Merchant and this Gentleman broker to preuent in-
conueniencie, if the brokers bond be an hundreth pounds,
the Merchant will lend fiftie more, and maketh y* young
man to seale an absolute bond as his owne debt, so that
the desperate deble of the decayer coufoned, by his
meanes is brought to be the true debt of this silly Gen-
tleman. Naie when they haue fatted both their fingers,
they leauue not thus, but from money shooe at land, for
if the Gentleman haue 500. pound in stocke payable at
24. or 25. yeares, they will so worke as all that shall
be their proper goods, which they will recouer out of the
executors hands, either by attachment or otherwise, and
besides that, so cunningly will they deale, that although
they haue sufficient assurance in hand alreadie, yet wil
they not leauue till they get an other more sure string to
their bowe, therby to compasse the poore Gentlemans
lands. At his want they will deale thus. This Gent-
leman and the broker must bee inuited by the Merchant,
when amongst other table talke, M. Scrape-penie fèecles
my youth if his monie be gone, & offering speeches of wil-
lingnes to prouide him alwaies at his need, sets on by a
becke
against Usurers.

beck his coughing mate, to procure ye gentleman to crave more mony, which he doth, ye merchant cunningly couling his craft, and wert him thus. Gentleman you see I am far out already, & upon your single bond I have disbursed a round sum of money, no lesse than 500. pounds, which in a poore mans purse as I am, is no small quantitie, neuertheles if you wil affoord me farther assurance, I wil not stick in redie mony once more to lend you 30. pounds. The gentleman neuer tofore vfed to receive ready mony at ye first hauds, begins to yeeld him harty thaks & humbly to pry him to demand & he will not performe, for faith he, considering your honest dealing, I cannot think you may imagine any refonable assurance which I wil not seale to. Why the quothe ye merchant, ye matter standeth thus, if so be you will seale me an estatute for my mony, no sooner shal you haue done it, but you shal haue ye mony, all your bonds in, & a defeance to, this ye I offer is reaonable, & to morrow if you will I will doe it. Agreeed quothe ye Gentleman, & so takes his leave, the next morrowe according to promis, the Gentleman sealeth the assurance, acknowledging an estatute, before somone justice of the bench, and comming to his Merchants house for his money, is delayed for that daie of, & in fine, his absolute anf were is this, that without a suretie he promised him none: he takes witness of his friend (as he tearmeth him) a pretie pece of witnesse, when he feth no remedie, he demandeth his bonds, & he withholdeth the, he craves his deceanse, & cannot haue it. Thus is ye poore Gentleman brought into a notable mischiefe, first in being coufoned of his mony, next deluded by his estatute wout defeance (for if ye defeasance be not deluiered ye same time or daie, ye flatute is, it is nothing available) thirdly by his bonds detaining, which may be recovered against him, & continue in full force, and the vfurter that playes all this rie, will yet be counted an honest and well dealing man. But flatter them who so lift for me,
An Alarum

I rather wish their soules health, then their good countenances, though I knowe they will storme at me for opening their secrets, yet truth shall countenaunce mee since I seeke my countries commoditie. Here you see two houses destrouied manifestly, ye one of them, from a Gentleman made a craftie couner, the other of them from a landed man, a silly poore wretch. And wonderfull it is to see, considering the asperitie of the Penall statute set downe by her Maiestie, and her honourables Peeres in the Parliament. How pretie collusions these cunning merchants can find to infringe them. One priuate practife they haue in deliuerie of ye commoditie, to make the condition of the Obligation thus. The condition, &c. is this, that if the within bound, T. C. his heires, executors or assignes, doe well and truely pay or cause to be paid to ye aboue named M. S. the sum of 40. pounds of lawfull mony of England, at his own dwelling house, scituatet & being in Colman street, which he ye sayd T. C. standeth indebted vnto him for, if so be that he the sayd M. S. or S. his wife be in life, ye then. Otherwise, &c. Now in this condition, ye casual mart bringeth it out of copasse of statute, thus by collusions M. Scrape-penie gathers vp his mony. Others worke by statute and recogniaunce, making their debtor to discharge in their booke of account the receit of so much mony, where indeede they had nothing but dead commoditie. Other worke by liues, as if such a one liue thus long, you shall give mee during his or her life 10. pounds a yeare, for 30. pounds, and be bound to the performance of that by statute. Other some deale in this sorte, they will picke out among the refuse commoditie some pretie quantitie of ware, which they will deliuer out with some mony, this sum may be 40. pound, of which he will haue you receive 10. pound readie mony, and 30. pounds in commoditie, and all this for a yeare: your bonde must be recogniaunce, now what thinke you by all computation your commo-
against Usurers.

commoditie will arise unto, truely I my selfe knew him that received the like, and may boldly avouch this, that of that thirtie pounds commoditie, there coulde by no broker be more made then four nobles: the commoditie was Lute stringes, and was not this thinke you more then abominable usurie? Naie common losses, & ye reasonablest is, for 36. pound for three months, accounted a good penie worth, if there be made in redie mony, 20. pounds, naye passing good if they make 25. pounds, I haue known of fortie, but sixteene pound, and tenne shillings. These be general payments, and receits, incident to the most part of the young Gentlemen that I knewe deale that wayes: and truely I my selfe knowe within my time, no few number of Gentlemen, which are utterly undone by this meanes, and vnlesse this euill be prevented, and Gentlemen take not more heed, more will followe after. But if the punishment of these men were In discretione Judicis, notwithstanding the lawe were couloured with all by them, yet the conscience of the judge woulde cut such ill members off. In former ages these things being knowne, were lookest unto, and now when most punishment is menaced, usurie is most practised. Well may we now see that the craftie haue as many caulises, as the discreet cautions. If we had as severer lawes in England, as once in Athens Solon set downe, wee shoulde then cast a rayne over the head strong vnruleynesse of these Caterpillers: there it was not lawfull, the Father being liuing, that anye money shoulde bée lent unto the sonne: who béeing vnder his Fathers gouernement, was not to bée ordered according to his owne lyking: and there who soever did transgresse this lawe, it was ordainèd that hee might haue no recouerye, nor bée releued anye waye by iustice, for that it was doubted, that the sonne hauing no wayes to aunfwere that hee did owe, shoulde eyther be inforced by practising coniurations in the Cite.
tie, or exercising priyue thefte in his Fathers house, to ridde and discharge himselfe of the burthen of his debt.

The *Aegyptians* and *Athenians* seeing the error of couetous vfurie to take footing in their prouinces, by approued judgement concluded, that by no instrument, plea, execution, or other meanes in lawe, a bodie might bee detained: the originall being for corrupt gains.

The *Romanes*, who not onelye inuented, but imitated those Lawes which confounded error, by decreé of Senate, (with the *Athenians*,) in the very same tearmes as they, didde sette downe, that no money should bee lent to young heyres vpon interest, neyther allowing the detinue pleadable, nor the vfurie auanswerable, haung a priuate eye into the vnmeasurablerable and greedie intents of those couetous carles, who compasse the Fathers landes before the Sonne come to it.

In the Lawe of the twelue Tables, orders in this caufe were prescribed, and directions set downe by the Tribunes: among whome, a man of rare vertrue, *Lucius Genuitius* instituted and made a law, where in he enacted, that no vfurie, nor vfurers shoulde bee allowed.

*Lucius Lucullus* seeing this errorre alreadye creapt thorough all *Asia*, and (lyke a wife gouernour) wylling to preuent, not onelye made a Law to auoyde all occaision of vnlawfull gains, but also appoynted punishementes to those that were subieçt to the errorre.

*Tiberius Caesar* as curious as the rest for common good, didde with as greate circumfasction as might bee, take awaye the caufe, and displace the effecte of this mischiefe; not suffering that to take heade
heade in his governement, that was the capytall enimie of a well ordered State: Claudius Caesar not yeelding to his Auncestours in honourable acti-ons, renewed these Lawes: Vespatian continued them: and Marcus Antonius Pius, with Alexander Severus established them with publike instrumen-tes: who to the fore-passed erroures by farther infight ioyned this, That by this vnlawfull get-ting, manye of the best and most auncient houses in all Italy, were brought to ytter ruyne, and con-fusion.

The Indians disdayning such seruile attemptes, not onely millikte of lending, but also forbad borrowing, neither is it lawfull for an Indian to proffer, nor agreeable for one of the Nation to suffer iniuryes: disdayning among them both the vfe of oblygations, and the abuse of pawning.

Hatefull was this errour in Licurgus Common weale of Sparta, whereas not onely the name was odious, but also the thing it selfe was asperlye pun-ished.

Agis King of the same Citie, seeing the practises of the couetous to work so woderfully as they seemed, not onely punished the attempters of vnlawfull profite, but also in the open market place, hee burnt all the bondes and Oblygations of the rich Bankers in the Citie.

In Thebes it was by statute forbidden, that anye man should be put in office, that within tenne yeares before the election had practised any vnlawfull chaffering.

The Germanes in theyr taxations of antiquitie: whereas they bounde the Theefe to restore double the thing he stole, they ordeyned that the vfuror shuld make recompence foure folde for his inuierie. And in
An Alarum

borrowing the felicitie of all these Countries, wee are not so happie, as to abridge those errors that they most mislykt off: But heere perhapses some curyous maintainer of vnnecessary members will conclude, that the state cannot anie wayes bee hindered by anie these actions, inferring that the dissolution of one familie, is the setting vp of another: which in as many vertues maye match, and with as greate value imploie it selfe in the state, as the other that is decayed.

Hæreunto I shewe this aunswer, that if it bée true, that the nobilitie of the Father worketh in the childe, I cannot see howe these vpstarts maye anie waies employe themselues in honourable Actions, when as neither their anceftours euer knewe more then their Beads, or their Fathers other then vnlawfull gains: and howe canne it bée that where the minde onely worketh in seruile subiects, it shoulde anie waies be eleuated to attempt honourable exploits? But be it these sorte of men are necessarie both in themselves, & for their Countrie, which cannot be concluded, in that they be broken members: yet must they conclude by the (touchtone of truth) the Scriptures, that their necessarienesse in this world, makes them vnnecessary for God: by whose presidents if they shoulde leuell their lawes, I am afraid the graft wold be so stiffe in the bending, that it would be rather thought more necessarie for the fewell, then worthy the correction. In the moost happiest man y't euer was, whether philosopher or otherwise, I find this, y't one onely blemish in his actions hath made them ben noted for an error: now if these men shuld in their enterprises be gazde into, I feare me y't as in the black Iet is seene no white: in the deadlye poison is founde no preferuatione: in the sproting iuie, no fruitee: on the vnecessary thistle no grapes: so in these men the mi-

chiefe
against vsurers.

chiefe woulde be so manifest, that the shew of vertue would be extinquished. So that I can necessarily conclude this, that both these sorte of men are vnnesarye for themselves, vnmeet for their countrey, vnfit for a family, yea convenient for nothing, but to present the painter with the true image of couetousnes. For themselves how can they be profitable, in destroying their soules, and martering their bodies? in confusing themselves with thought, in deuising of newe attemptes to delude. If they compare but their hearts sorrow, with their exceede gain, they shall finde this most certain, that the encombrances of the minde are so peysant, that they doo by odde weigh downe their commoditie in the bal lance. What is it to get good, and to loose happinesse? to enjoye much riches, and little rest? to haue manye Lordships, and much hart-breake? Alas, what are the goods of fortune, that they shoule entice? or the plesures of the flesh, that they shoule allure? If our fhately pallices were to continue permanent, if our worldly riches were to make our after yeares renowned, if euer thoufand of our ducates, were to benefit vs but with a hundred good precepts: I wold beare with couetousnes with the beft, & practife it with the moft: but since we see that much hording cannot be without finne, much getting without grieue, much profit without paine, much increafe of goods, without decreafe of vertues, I cannot but conclude with the philosophers, that the hoording vp of riches maketh many impressions of vices. And that those that are no wayes profitable for themselues, are not worthy the names of citizens in a state: whereas, when all things should be limitted by vertue, how can vsury be winkt at, when it is no waye legitimate. Our lawes in this state, although they suffer a commoditie, yet confirme not they taking: concluding heerein, a meruaylous pollicye: to thofe haue in figh, which is,

E. iiij. that
An Alarum

that leaving it evident, that where neither Lawe of God can limit them, nor disposing of right suffer them, nor preuention of errours withdrawe them from punishing this error, and not letting it slip they as willyng to pul away by pece-meals, not to confound altogether: like wife Surgions eate out the dead flesh, by sundrye plaisters, and no sodaine corrosue, thereby wisely warning the wife to pull back by curtesie, and the indurate by beholding their forberance, to feare the scourge when it shal come.

Yet some will heere adde and inferre, (though unneceffarilie,) that those whom I heere so asperlye reprehend, are as religious as the best, haunt the Church with the most, at their burial be as bountifull as the godliest, and therefore it may not be thought, that seeing so many goods, they should follow the bad. To whom I aunswere, If they heare correction of sin by often haunting of sermons, yet continue their wickednesse, when they know what it worketh: their actions are wicked, their liues dissolute, their endes desperate. For their bountie at their burialls, that is but their last action, & their best attempt: but if we looke into the considerations of their benificence, I doubt not but we shall finde whereas their shoe wringeth them. If they are liberall to leaue them a memorie when they are gone, alas they strife against the streame: for this it will fall out, perhaps they shal haue a few poore womes praiers for their blacke gonnys, but a thousande decayed Gentlemens curies for their high exactions. If they be bounteous in hope to recompence yt which is past, alas it is as much, as to cast water to stop a gappe, or gather brambles to build manner houses. If wee but looke into in this their penie doale, we shall finde a kinde of impulsion in all thinges: Truely, truely, I feare mee, if Mas vfurer knewe
knewe he shoulde liue, hée had rather haue a fayre pawne for his foure nobles, then a thoufand prayers of a poore woman: and the forfaiture of a Leafe for his xx. poundes, then the funerall Epitaph of the vnuefities for his laft willes liberalitie. Since therefore im- pulsion forceth them to be bounteous, not freé will libe- rall, we must accompt of them thus that they are both vnworthie praiue, being vnwilling to be bountifull, and little to bee esteemed of, though their pretence bee neuer so perfect. What praiue defeueth he that will proffer medicines to a whole bodie? or the fpur to a will- ling horfe? or the raine to an vnwildie colt? or honor to a peruerfe man: shall we conclude, because ye vfuruer is rich, he is righteous? Because wealthie? Wife: because ful of golde, therefore godly? I feare me it wil fall out, that some of our scrape penies, are as worthie to be deliuered to perdition, as Sauanacola of Rome, of whom Marulus maketh mention) who not satiified with excefiue gain in his life time, at his death became a praiue to diuells: It greeueth me to consider of ye vnhappie state of some, who like fine cloth are deuoured with these moths, like white cambricke are stained with thisyon mould: like sily birds, are deceiued with the call of this Fowler. O vn- happy state, staint with fo unprofitable members, whose feete tread the wayes of erreurs, mindes imagine mi- chiefe, heartes are indurate, confounding the fatherlefe, oppressing the widow, making all poore, and themselues onely rich.

A lamentable case it is, to fee howe true simplicitie, the maintainer of peace, is almost altoge- ther exiled out our common weale: and that world- lye wit doeth wade so farre, as heauenlye wife are brought into admiration of their miichiefe. In o- ther notable Gouernementes and common weales, this one vice hath hadde a fall, and heere where it should
An Alarum

should be most detested, it is most vned. Great hath bene our wifdomes in repressio of côspiracies, great our po-
licies in maintaining of peace, circumspect our preuë-
tions to eschew mutinies: and yet the long time we haue
laboured in this, yet dayly more and more it groweth
to head: and whereas the other vices haue bene exter-
minated by good looking to, this (though altogether loa-
thed) is moost lookt after. And in this case I must appeale
to you (right Honorable) whose wifedome is continual-
ly imploied, to the maintenaunce of our fstate: & craue
you caft your eye aside, and but looke into the worlde a
lyttle, lette your Herauldes Bookes be spied into, con-
sider the fstate that hath bene, and now is: and I feare
me there will some teares fall, and more care be concei-
ued. Alas I know it well, that many auncient coates
will be found there vncountenaunced, and it is to bée
found out, that some fleéepe on their beddes of downe,
in those mannor houfes, which were builde for the
fstate of some of our bést noble feuigniors. Nay, is it not
true, that more are eaten out with vnry, then anye o-
other abuse whatsoeuer? And although Commissions are
graciously grauntet from her Maiefie, as a moft mer-
cifull Prince, and from your Honors, as moft sage, fa-
therly, and prudent tenderers of gentry, grown into po-
uertie: yet fuch is the contempt of some men, as they
neither measure commaund, nor haue respect to consci-
ence. The reverence Fathers and eyes of Religion in
this Common weale, how exclaine they on this vice,
and pronounce the wrathfull threats of the Almighty
against thes vngracious gatherers? yet how flanderly
they regard them, their manifeft & notorious mischiefes
bear record. So that it is to be feared, that when neither
honourable command may controll them, nor diuine ad-
monition reclaime them, they are grown into a repro-
bate fenfe, and hane forfaken the Law of the Lord, and
hunted after the whore, and are dronken with the ly-
cour
cour of her abhominations.

Principis obso fero medicina paratur,
Cum mala per longas invaluere moras.

Noble Lords, may it pleae you yet a little more to
giue me leaue, that as I haue manifested the mischeife,
so (to my slender conceit) I may imagine a salue. The
Nobilitie, Gentrie, and other heires whatsoeuer, either
by reason of their Fathers tenour are wardes vnto her
Maieftie, or else by the tender prouision of their Pa-
rents, they are lefte to the discretion of their kinfolke.
For those that by her Maiefties prerogatiue, by ye death
of their Fathers, fall into her protection: the most part
of them are begged by Gentlemen, and committed to
their tuition: among whome, as there be some prouen-
dent and carefull to consider of the childes commodtie,
so (I feare me) other some are selfe minded, and greedie
of their owne gaine: which if so be it fall out, I feare
me the childe that is vnder this gouernment will hap-
pely miscarrie, for if maintenance come from the pro-
tector slenderly, the nature of the youth being noble,
will couet after supplie, and so through the couetousnes
of the one, growes the confusion of the other, and by this
meanes growes ye Gentleman into ye Merchants booke
in arrerages, when his warden furnished him not ac-
cording his degree and calling: but it may be, that there
bee purposes imagined by the gouernour, and praetised
by the Merchaut, so that the one will not bee pertaker
of the shame, yet will he not sticke to beare part of the
gaine. But to let further matters wittingly ouerflip,
for that I finde it good to winke at somewhat: returne
we to the other fortes of heires, lefte to the tuition of
friendes: among whome there growe lyke inconven-
ancies, as in the former: for nowe a dayes kinfolke
are as couetous as others, and as craftye as the beft,
whose priuate conueyaunces the young heires
knowe, and feuerallye when they be fought into, will

F. open.
open. But for the ordering of all these things, and the recovering of this state, it were convenient that the Warden of the Wardes under her Maiesties protection, should at the receipt of the Gentleman, be bound according to the value, to the honourable, that have authority in that case, for the usage of the Gentleman, and that certaine stipend might be set downe annuallye for his prouision, rather with the most then least, so that then it will fall out, that having sufficient of his owne, he will not depend on the supplie of an other. The like annimaduertion if it bee had in respect of the other, and the care of taking the bonds, and prefixing the portion set downe by the direction of certaine Justices of peace in euery sheere, we should have lesse complaints to trouble your honours, and merchauntes should want young ministers to ridde them of their refuse commoditie. I haue glaunced into a matter (my good Lord) which if wisdome considerately looke into, there will growe an exquisite plattforme. These causes right honourable are necessarie, and needfull to be noted, and such they be, that no doubt they will be as beneficial to the state, as anie other whatsoeuer: For by this meanes your honours shall be praised, the wardens well thought of, the Gentlemen kept in good state, and the Merchant abridgde of his crafty dealings. I haue heard this cause lamented of among the most part of that profession, who loth their title should be attributed to so outrageous dealers. If they will desire the name, let them vie the nature, & let not all the whole order bee blemished, by a few disordered dealers blame: but to leave this to your honourable and graue consideration, and to returne to your curteous Gentlemen, to whome this matter most pertaineth, & for whose onely cause this pain is taken: I most earnestly beseech you looke into your owne states, & consider with your felues, the misery & mischiefe that groweth by these follies: consider ye end of all these pratices,
against usurers.

tises which the usurers doe put in vre, forsooth it is to
make you beggers, where now your supplies be plentiful,
& to emptie your purses, where now they are replen-
ished: consider of their mercy, either it is imprisonment,
or else libertie with more shame: weygh of their ends
agreeing to theiyr life: it was a pretie and wittie saying
which was written,

Avaro quid mali optes ni vt visat diu.

With a couetous man no more mischiefe, then that
he may liue long. For he dieth daily in care, and con-
sumeth in thought: refraine prodigalitie, so shall you
haue no need of the: bee continent, so shall you be fough-
to of them: leaue them to their owne lufts, they are not
of y* Lord: let your garments be comely, & not costly: for
a comly continent man is more esteeemed of, then a cost-
ly spende thrifte accompted of. It is the vertues of
your mindes, the perfections of your vnderstadingge,
your intellectual contemplacions, that makes you ac-
counted of among the wife, and beloved among the
learned: In your professions be studious, for y* brings
profit: an houre well spent, is better then a dayes plea-
sure: eschew those things that may decay your memo-
ry, & in every good action continue to the end: trust not to
apparant goodes, beléeue not cedulously y* faire spoken,
be as prudent to eschew trouble, as the envious is
prudent to procure your discomfort: looke on nothing
that may alter you from a man, thinke on nothing that
may mislead you, if you promise, performe it, but in pro-
misung vse discretion: these be the fruites of experience,
learnt by some in forrowe, and lette them bee practified by you in securitie. Let not the garish shew of
a present pleasure, the fillie shadooe of an earthlye
delyght, a transtorie similitude of a momentanye
glorye, make you followe that which wyll coste
you manye fighes and sundrye followes (when
you looke into your estate, and see howe you are

F. ij. compar-
An Alarum.

compassed of friendes, smilde vpon by fortune, beautified by nature, perfected by art, when you perceiue care hath not yet sorrowed your forehead: labour euene then to continue friendes, to make peace with fortune, to mainetaine nature, to studye arte, and being freed as yet from trouble, fence your actions so strong, as they may neuer become troublesome. Aurelius in his Court seeing certaine Philosophers ving vnseeemly iestures, wagging their heads, toying with theyr garments, and stamping with their feete, gathering by their exterior behauior, how vnapt their actions were in respect of their precepts, expulued them thecourt, as vnneeete to be preferred to honours. Although not Marcus Aurelius, but wife Saba now governing, think you that gracious Elisabeth cannot as well finde out a vain head vnder a wauing feather, a dissolute minde vnder a coppeece dublet, a wanton thought vnder a straung habite, as the Emperour vnder a lyght iesture? Yes truely (Gentlemen): no doubt but that eie y° winketh at most things, seeth many, and that wonderfull capacite that comprehendeth so much discipline, cannot ouerlip the mislyke of making brauerie. If one error were as much banished England, as it was Rome, neither should idlenesse offer the couetous opportuniteit, neither the idle be confounded by the couetous. It is idlenesse that maketh amorous, it is idlenesse that maketh factionatiue, it is idlenesse that breedes excess, it is idlenesse that destroyeth all humane happinesse, the eye fixt on heavenlye contemplations, gazeth not on earthlye beautie, the thought occupied on remembrance of moral preceptes, neuer vouchsafe the mifdeeemings of the fantachie: y° bodie subdued by affidious travaile, is neuer altered by the motions of the flesh: the hope grounded on immortality, hath not reference to an houres pleasures. So that man is neuer altered in himself, enimie of himselfe, procurer of his parents troubles: but euene then chief-
against Vfurers.

chiefly, whē idlenes is predominant, folly preferred, & fashions to feed, fantasies allowed of. The means then to auoyd the Vfurers booke, is to be continent: the way to be continent, is not to be idle: the reward of not being idle, is the daily increafe of more knowledge: and the increafe of more knowledge maketh a man happie. The sting of the Aſpe confoundeth in slumbers, the venome of idleness, waiteth careless opportunitie: truly gentlemen, the first step to auoyd expence, is to grow in contempt of brauerie, which if our noble younge youthes wold practis for a while, it wold so fall out, y' not onely vaine fantasies shoule ceafe, fonde fashions finde no fauourers, and the vfurers hauing his odde refuse commodities dead id his hand, would either affoord better peniworths, or seeke for forreine traffique. But to leauе you Gentlemen to your good counfailes, and returne to you good maſter vfurers, whose eares glowe at the re-hearſfall of these enormities, I must pray you giue me leauе to make vp a conclusion, and to finiſh these fewe lines with an admonition for your caufe, and though the corrections I vſe be bitter, account of them the better, for why they be more cordiall. A gréedie desirē of gayne, is the disease that infecteth you, some termes it thriſtenſe, some néerneſse, but in plaine tearmes, it is vfurie: and that is nought els but a gréedie desire of other mens goods, and this by the commandement is forbidden to be followed, and therefore irreligious are they that vſe it. The man that coueteth gold, conceiueth not goodneſse, his appetite is of the earth, and thofe that are earthly minded, fauour not the things that are of God. What though you cloath your felues in simplicitie of Doues, and your inwarde habite be worfe then the vocacite of Wolues, he that made you knoweth you, and he whom you offend can (and will) puniſh you: you wil faie you were naturally borne, (as Tully witnesseth) to take care for your felues, and to prouide Victum & ve-

F. iiij.
An Alarum

issetum, meate and clothing: and I graunt it, but where find you, either Ethnike, prophane, or sacred sentence, to confirme your extreme hoording vp of golde, yea then most earnestly, when you are most rich? The labourome Ant gathereth not in exceede, but sufficient provision for the Winter, yet without reason: and you which are reasonably borne, hoorde vp more, then orderly (at first sight) you well knowe howe to imploy. You long after Nabals vineyard with Iefabel, but the dogs shall devour you in the gate: you heape house vpon house, land vpon land, Quasi numquam fit periturum seculum, as though this world would last euer, but fadainly shal the wrath and curse of the Lord fall vpon you, and (without spee- die repentance) he will confume you in a moment. O turne speedely vnto the Lord, and put not off from daie to daie, leaft his wrath be hot against you, and he make you pertakers of the plagues of Chor and Abiram. Remember your olde escapes that haue past you, consider of their falls that are decayed by you, and your felues if you haue anie contrition, and compunction of heart, will lament the generall misfortune with me. Did you arise of nothing? Were you calde from base degree to high estate? From poore seruants wer you made rich masters? Why, your goods make anwere, sayyng, you haue more then you can well spend, and I deeme the greater your talent is, the more you haue to anwere for: but weigh in your felues, howe this greate masse of money grew vnto you: you must count that this Farme came to your handes by the forfayture of such a Leafe: this money became yours, by the vertue of such an Obliga- tion: you haue scratpe vp this ready coyne, by making Centum pro cento: nay, you haue vndone these manye poore Gentlemen, onely by inriching your selue. Too true it is, (alas) (and wisedome priately bewaileth it, to looke into your crueltie, and Gentlemens folly) that ma-
against Vjuries.

many houses are decayed by your means, and that you are Lords of that, which should be the portion of more profitable subjects: whose miserie driueth them to trie conclusions in all places: and both to forsake their Countrey, I pray God not to alter their conscience. Nay in these extremities that they are driuen into, which of you either reléeueth them? or comforteth them in their sorrowes? so farre are you (you worldlings) frō lessening their miseries, as that (Perillus like) you invent new tortures, to driue them from your doores, calling them vacabonds, and bride well birds: who in very truth were your best Masters and setters vp, but your felues with Perillus shall taft of the engines you haue provided for others, and the Lorde shall pittie the fatherlesse, and comfort the afflicted, when that dreadfull daye shall come, in which the heauens shall be opened, and the Sonne of man shall come to judgement: how will the case then fstand with you? shall your welth then acquite you? No, no, the Judge is not partial, he is iust in all his dooings, and true in all his sayings. In that day the horror of your conscience shall condemne you, Sathan whom you haue serued shall accuse you, the poore afflicted members of Christ shall beare witness against you, so that in this horror and confusion, you shall desire the mountaines to fall vpon you, and the hils to couer you from the fearfull indignation of the Lord of hostes, and the dreadfull condemnation of the Lambe Iesus. When it shalbe found out, that you wer rich, yet reléeued none: that you were of wealth, yet comforted none: that you rather replenished the prisons, then released the prisoner: that your life be found fawced with crueltie, and no one action favouring of mercie: the Lord shal place you among the goates, & pronounce his Ve against you, he shal thunder out this sentence, Goe you curzed into euerafting fire, prepared for the diuell.
An Alarum

diuell and his angeles. This is the reward of wickedness; this is the punishment of cruelty: looke vpon this therefore (you worldly minded men,) and consider of these sayings: harden not your hearts, but be you converted, relieve the poore, be harboursome, restore to the owner that you have wrested from him, and turne, turne, turne vnto the Lord (I beseech you) lest you perish in your owne abominations: and to conclude, account of me as your wel wisher, who for publike commoditie haue opened your inconueniences, and for brotherly amitie, counsaile you to call your felues home: and I beseech you as speedely reclame you from your errors, as I doo brotherly admonish you of your escapes. How happie were I that having leffe cause, might haue leffe matter to write on? And haplesse are you, if not won with these warnings, you giue more occasion to be written on: now stay you where you are, & alter your natures, and where you were accustomed to doo ill, now acquaint your felues to follow goodnes, and then it will thus fall out, that I which exclaimed vpon you for your vices, will then honour you for your vertues: & where in common assemblies your name growes odious in publike audience, you maye be praised for your good life. The Lord send our Gentlemen more wit,
our vfurers more conscience, and yngodline
ness & a fall: so Nobilitie shall not decay, but the sinner shall be reclai
med, and wickednes con
founded.

FINIS.

Truths
THE DELECTABLE
Historie of Forbonius and Prisceria.

In Memphis (the chiefeft citie of Aegypt) a place moft renowned by reaſon of the opulencie of the princes that haue gouerned that Monarchie: at such time as Sifmithres was head Priest of the fame, & Hidaspes gouernour of the Prouince, a noble Gentleman called Forbonius (highly accounted of for his vnreprovable prowesse, and among the beſt fort allowed of for his vnfekeable vertues) made his abode, whose tender yeares not yet subiekt to the experience of more riper judgement (as the wending Iuie about the stately Oke) entangled it felwe with many amorous objects, now allowing this choice, now approving ye person, straigbt admitting a third. But the fates hauing registred his laſt opinio in everlaſting & permanent deſtinie, made his manifolde aspects (as yet not ſtayed) to light vpon one ſeemely impressſion, and to allow of but one onely paragon: yet fo ſealed they his opinion, as (if it be true that the gods euer were lasciuous) I think the chiefeſt commaundr of the Heauens might vouchſafe of ſuch dalliance, and be onely amorous in this, that knowing heauenly perfeotions to be reſident in earthly substance, he would either borrow fire of Venus to make the creature pliable, or carrie fire into the heauens from whēce Prometheus firſt did ſteale lightning. Favorable was
was the climate, that allowing vnjuerually to all the creatures it compassef onely, blacknesse, vouchsafed
Prisceria (Forbonius mistres) such sweeet favour, who borne of noble parents within the citie, (as of Soldanus, vize-roie of that Prouince adjoyning to the citie, and Valdu-nia, daughter and heire of Theagines of Greece, the cöpartener of forrowe with Caricula, the straunge borne childe of the Aegyptian king;) not onely match al titles of honour with exquisitenesse of proportion, but also so coupled the perfecctions of the minde, with the proportion of the bodie, as rather nature might difdaine her induftrye, not art repent her of the dowrie she had granted her: this sweeet fixed Comet coasted Forbonius affecfios, who like the careful Marriner, hauing (amidst the froftie night) sought for his Loade fтарre, and at breake of morning (his eies almoft dazled with looking) found it out: so our noble young Gentleman, hauing paft ouer many perfonages w' a flight ouer looke, at laft finding out his mistres alofted him by fate, yeelded willinglye vnto importunitie of the Deffinies, and wonne altogether to bee subieft, beeing captiued with fancie, hée applied himfelfe wholye to the accomplifhment of his defires, and the attainment of his mistreffes favour: and for that the Goddesse of love is plyable to all benignitie, as not suffering a true fervitour to bee long vnrewarded: it fo fortuned, that she prosperously furthered our noble Aegyptian in his purpose, preferring him by opportunitie to the fight of his defired pleafures: for the propinquitie of their abode was fuch, as that Priscerias chamber windowe, had a profeft into Forbonius garden, by which meanes, the Gentleman in his meditations might beholde his mistres, and Prisceria (beeing by the equitie of the deffinies prefigurated to straunge miffortune) might haue occasion to looke, and feeing, might loue: but as this conuenience was fauourable one waie, fo was the frowarde disposition of the
The Turtle pleased with his she compere,
With sweet aspects, and many a turning lure,
Describes the zeale in tearmes should well appeare,
If nature were so gratious to assure
The filly bird with speech as well as I:
Who stole of speech by turnes my woes descrie.

And though perhaps my tearmes by distance be,
Seaoynd from thee: I wis my mournfull mone,
Doth pearce thine eares, and Eccho tells for me,
In lowre reports: would she and I were one.

G. ii.
The Historie of

For whom I liue, and whom I onely loue,
Whose sweet aspects my dying fancies moue.

And if the aire by yeelding calme consent.
Make sweet Prisceria priuie to my suite,
Vouchsafe deere sweet, that beautie may relent,
And graunt him grace, whom distance maketh mute:
So either hope shall make me climbe the skie,
Or rude repulfe enforce my fancies flie.

Prisceria not altogether priuie to the report, yet concluding all purpofes to hir owne fantafie, conceyuing by his manifolde sighes, aspetces, and motions, whereunto he applied his actions, with a folempne sighe, as wishing him present, and a seemely bent, as requiting his curtesie, betooke hir selfe to hir pillowe, where comparine euerye accident together, both of the zeale shée bare to Forbonius, and of the profer he proffered to her, she brake out into these speeches.

Alasfe (unhappie Prisceria) what vntoward destinie hath befallen thee? That in thy flowring yeares and prime of beautie, thou art become a thrall to vncertaine pleasure, neyther knowing from whence the errour first sprong, nor by what Treacles it may at laft bee expelled. If it bee that nature enuying my perfection hath alloted mée this purgatorie, that hauing at freé becke all the benefites of Fortune, yet I should with inwarde bondes bee incwined with the holdefaft of fancie. Alasfe that in prefixing the torment, shée hath not proffered a remedye, or in bestowing an vlcer, hath not vouchsafed a corrosiue. Howe straungely am I martyred, sillye maide that I am? That by one onelye looke haue conceyued such an impression, as neyther arte can alter with medicine, nor time eate out with continuance.

Woe is mée that I loue, yet fortunate am I that
Forbonius and Prisceria.

that I hate not, for by the one, I am depriv'd of lybertie: by the other, I shall onerpass the sorrow by sureneffe. Yet are thy thoughts more favorable to thee Prisceria, then the successe in thy loue will be fortunate. Thou loue Forbonius, and why? for his vertue: yet thy father hateth him vpon olde grudges, with whom when rancour preuayleth, what may be more lookt for, then contempt and denyall? But Forbonius seeketh Priscerias fauor, not Soldunius friendship: but Prisceria cannot enjoy Forbonius, without Soldunius fauor. But Forbonius will by happie marriage conclude all mallice, but thy father hauing an envious mind, will haue a supititious eare. Alas why imagine I wonders in my fancy, hoping that thofe deftenies (which inthralled my affection) wil subiect my fathers resolutions: since neither reason alloweth me any probablitie to worke vpon, neither hath Forbonius any motion as I see to compass ought: well, to the satisfaction of my friend, and to the contentment of my forrowinge hart: my freend shal know my zeale, and I will continue my affection, which being begun with so wonderfull causes, must needes finishe with a miraculoues effect.

With these conclusions she fell a sleepe, leauing me to returne to Forbonius, who being tormented with the same furie, and troubled with equall fancie, seeing his light to be eclipsed, I meane his Mistresse vanished, began heauely to complaine himselfe in these or such lyke termes.

Alas you destinies, whose courses are inevitoble: how fortuneth it, that in bestowing casualities in mas life, you prescrib'e not meanes to preuent misfortunes? and onelye beginning to fester the heart, prefixe no presidens, whereby the humours may be expelled. If all things are to be referred vnto an ende, what may I wel imagine of my estate? who intercepted by all occasions, must either finishe my misfortunes miserably, or despe-
rately. O loue, iustly maist thou be counted licentious, whereas thou neither prescribest limites to thy selue, to inthrall: nor meanes to thy subiects to attain libertie. But why exclaime I on him, that hath blest me with a benefit? as though the fate that made Forbonius happie in louing, cannot establiss his succeffe, as that it shall not be measured by misfortune. I glorie in the benefit of my martirdome, since a certain inward hope affureth me, that divine beautie cannot be sequestred from iust pittie, nor a tried seruice in loue, requited with a difdainfull hate. But foolish man that I am, howe maye it be, that in seeking beautie, I labour not to attaine it? & desiring to enjoy a benefit, I attempt not to make trial of my Mistresse bountie? Why, by last nights becke she vouchsafed some shew of acceptaunce: and that may as well be of reproofe as lyking. (O Forbonius,) it is a filly hope that is conceived by signes, either attempt further, or perwade thy selue of no fauour. Her father (fily wretch) enuieth thee, and thinkest thou to compass his daughter? alas, faint hope is this when as those that shoule build vp, doo destroy: when such as shoule perwade, doo diiswade: when as he that dooth command moft earnestly, dooth forbid. But loue hath no respect of consanguinitie, but hauing onely relation to him which he fauoureth, delighteth onely in the posseffion of his choyce, yet is not Forbonius, sune she loueth: well, I see he that will be fortunate, must hazard, and that man that will be gracious in his Mistresse eye, must by outward attempts and vnaccustomed purposes, seeke to confirme his happinesse.

Wherevpon (vpon sundry conclusions) he inferred thus, that the next day, by certaine rare attemptes, hee would either finifh that he had so long sought for, or perrih in the persouerance of his enterprise: and the day seruing to attempt that which he imagined by night, he bethought himselfe of the Gymnosophists of ye country,
of Forbonius and Prisceria.

trey, among whom rememng one of singular experience, and notable lerning, he refundd vnto him, opening first, how he was thralled by fancie, how precluded by all occasions, especially by the fathers disdain, next, how some opportunitie serued him, lastly how the agony tormented him, desiring the Philosopher, whose wisedome couldse see into all causes, to search out the fatall Exi- gent of his loue. Appollonius (for so the Gymnosophist was called) hauing calculated the Gentlemans natiu- tie, and seeing some planets retrograde: couering the aprtie of the destenies, with the hidden secrecie of an Artist, discoursed thus.

O Forbonius, if as Socrates did his golde, thou drown thy afections, it would follow that with him thou shul- deft enioy free libertie of thy selfe, and not suffer thy afects to rule thy reason. Art thou bewitched by Circe? of a humane shape haft thou gotten a beastly forme? of a man borne to reasonable actions, wilt thou now swallow an unreasonable misfortune? If many cares be the decayers of the minde, if many sorrowes the consumers of the body, better were it by day to studie the lyberall Sciences, then at such time as we shoule imploye our selues to honourable aquests, to become vnhonourably licentious. Alas Forbonius considering what a louer is, what a louer suffereth, what a louer seeketh, I finde the person idle minded, I finde his patience an insupportable sorrow, I finde himselfe not himselfe, in ye he is vn- reasonable. The daily actions of a louer are discommen- dable, the night exclamations so odious, as that they in this couert nature, who shadowing ye world with darknes, limiting each creature his rest, yet they even in ye time labor in out-cries, in which they shoul take cument rest. My good friend, ye gretest wisdome is to measure euery attept wth his casualties, & if ought happen ye may seeme impossible, to caft off the rayne, and suffer it to passe in that forme it was concluded in.

Thou
The Historie of

Thou louest (Forbonius,) better wer it thou didst loath: for by loathing thou canst but be compted unnaturall, but by louing thou mayst fortune to be vnfortunate. If all things be ordered by the higher powers, it is vayne you must conclude to infringe what is concluded on, if the deestenes haue appoynted; that Forbonius shall not be happie in injoying Prisceria, Forbonius is not reasoning in suing for Prisceria. Vnhappie Paris in Helen, though fortunate in injoying her beautie: but when loue begins with a fading benefit, it endeth with an everlafting sorrow. The conclusion of a wife man must be, to yeelede to the necessitie of Fate, and to continue contented with that which cannot be altered by sucession. Tell me by the immortall Gods, my good friend I beseech thee, what happenes conceiueft thou possible to follow, either in injoying thy Lady, or finifhing thy loue? Alas, the greatest sweete is a continuall flower, and after many vnfortunate repulses, a sodain misfortune makes an ende of many a yeeres courting. I speake all this to this ende (my Forbonius,) because I would preuent that by counsell in the, which otherwise (if thou follow thine owne lure) will be a confusion to thy selfe. Thou comeft to me for counsell to compass loue, and I would confirme the, that thou shouldst auoyd the occasions of following loue. Thou wouldest by my meanes strayene arte to subdue nature, yet I labour both to direct by arte, and to suppress by nature. Truly (my good friend) looking but to the hidden secretes of nature, I finde thee subiect to manye misfortunes, and no way to be remedied but by one only virtue. Thou shalt (after long toyles) compass that thou hopeft for, yet when thy greatest pleasures begin to take the original: euin then shall they finde there exigent. Since threfore the resolutions of the heuens conclude, that by onely continent forbearance, thou shalt be disburdened of many misfortunes, I beseech thee lette this transi-
Forbonius and Prisceria.

transtorie pleasure be accompted off as it is, and finish yp thy loue with my counsell: so shalt thou be fortunate in preventinge desistenie, and continue in happines, wher too much loue may make thee vnluckie.

Forbonius lead by the inconstant opinion of his young yeares, not waying the graue and fatherly counsell of Appollonius, aunswered him thus.

O Father, when the wound is giuen, it is ill counsayling how to auoyd the stripe, and when the heart is captiuation, there can be but small recouery by counsell; hower it possible for me to restrain that in my selfe, which the Gods could not limit in their Deities? Eafie it is for the whole Phisition to counsell the sick patient, but when y* extremitie wringeth excesiuely, none bideth the martirdome but the afflicted. O Appollonius my minde measurith not the iniquitie of fate, neyther doe I seeke limits for that, which by no direction can be exterminated from out my heart. So that good father rather respect my present sute, then my future discommoditie, and by your counsell make ende to my forrowes: whereby it will thus come to passe, that enjoying the pleasure I long wish for, I may more boldlye beare the assault of froward fortune when it commeth. If it be onely death, that my enemie Fate threateneth me with, let me enioye this benefit, as for Fortune, I will be friende to her enemie, the which is the graue, and acquaynting my soule but with the onely Idea of my Miftresse, thinke my selfe as happie, as they that haue walkt by Elisan fieldes, a long space to their content.

Appollonius willing to doo him good, yet forrie hée could not preuaile with his counsaile, at length began thus.

Since my Forbonius thou wilt be ruled by no counfayle, thou must be pertaker of thine owne forrowe. As for thy request, I will so satisfie thée, as not onely thou shalt
The Historie of

shalt at thy pleasure conceive thy Mistresse minde, but also open vnto her the secrettes of thy heart, by which meanes thou shalt herein haue accomplishement of thy wish, though in so doeing thou shewe but lyttle wisdom. Whereupon, reforming to his studie, he brought forth a mirrour of notable operation, a practicke in prospectuie, which deliueriing to Forbonius, he commended it thus.

O my friend, I deliuer theee that see theee to see theee thy humour, which was composide to comprehend Arte. In this myrour thou maist after thou haft written thy minde: taking the Sunne beame, fend the reflection to thy mistresse eye, whereby she may as legably read thy letters, as if they were in her handses, and by thy instructions made privie to the secrets of thy glasse, retournre thine aunse were in that very forme in which thou sendest.
For the rest, I seeue it to your discretions, and good fortune, wishing all things to fall out as prosperouslye in your loue, as you would, and as I wish.

Our noble youth (In amours) hauing furnished himselfe of that he sought for, repayred vnto his studie, where devising in what tearmes he might sollicite his Mistres, at last he cyphered out his sorrowes in this sequell.

That fancie that hath made me thrall to thy beautie (sweete Prisceria) commendeth my submision to thy good grace: beseeching thee to be as fauourable in ministring a remedie, as thy beautie was readie to procure my thraldome. I make no refit in this my louing torment, but onely yeeld my self subject to ye impression. Maye it therefore please thee (sweete Prisceria) to be as beneficial in this, as the Gods are in their bounty, who for every faithfull interatie, returne a gratefull satisfaction. And heerein maist thou see my faith to be steadfast.
Forbonius and Prisceria.

fast, since Arte it selve serueth opportunities, and mini-estreth me both a means to open my hidden sorrowes, and thée a messenger to bewray thy silent secrets. I be-seech thée (by the sweete statues that are builded for the Goddesse that is honoured in Paphos,) to be as iust in returning fauour, as I am forwarde in bewraying my fancie: so shalt thou have the possesion of him, that is by destinies appoynted thy assurer beards-man, and I enjoy those pleasures, in which I may be only fortunate. Till then I must write my self as I am, The most vn-happieust louer that liueth.

Forbonius.

This cyphered out in faire charæcters, and disposed in such termes as his fancie then prefixed him, he tooke his way into his garden, waiting some necessarie opportunitie, to put his purposed attempts in practife, and to bewray his woes to Prisceria: who wouded with the remembrance of Forbonius perfections, and seeing no waye but his presence a meane to expell sorrowe, be-tooke her selfe to her accustomed prospecte, and with longing lookes she leuelled at his loue, which was alreadie stroken with her beautie.

The Gentleman fitted by these conuenient occasi-ons beganne his Philosophicall demonstration, and taking his aспект as necessarilie as hée might, hée presented Prisceria with his peniue submision: who confirmed by so conuenient opportunitie, betaking her selfe with all speede possible to her studie, and by a becke charging him with no leffe dispatch to giue attendaunce: she gaue annswered to his amorous intreaties with this gracious assabilitie.

H. iij. The
The Historie of

The Climate Forbonius where vnder I was borne, (beléeue me) either hath presfigured me the deñtenie to be inamoured by thée, or thée the subiect that shoulde besot me: and truly hëerein the working of the Gods are secret, who impoly such thoughts in me, as now by thy letters I finde wrought in thée, making a vnitie in both those hearts, who by reason of parents enuies, are like to finde fatall conclusions. And whereas by necessitie of fate I finde my selfe wholly captuied to thy pleatures, I doubt not but that God whome wee honour for his brightnesse, and who by his lightening miniftreth to our misfortunes, will be fauourable in our procedings. For me, if thy constancie be such as my true zeale is, I belëech thée by the same Goddeße to succour me, by whome I found my selfe first inthralled and made subiect to thée: meane while I will write as thy selfe, and rest as I am. The most unhappiest louver that lyueth.

Prisceria.

These conclusions being ministered with the same aspéctes they were proffered, the two poore couple had no other meanes to note the efecte of their private ioyes, but onely by silent smiles, gracious regardes, and trickelyng teares, and such lyke amorous actions, each one wishing the other, either happie in possessing their delght, or fortunate, if by death they were relëeued of their sorowe: and being intercepted by the clofure of the euening, they betooke themselues both of them to their restleße pillowes, concluding vpon many purpores, how to finishe their languishing and tormenting martirdome.
Forbonius and Prisceria.

Forbonius as one born to attempt, concluded with himselfe, considering how favourably all occasions fawned upon him) to attempt ye fleeing awaie of Prisceria: who poore soule in carefull dreames imagining of her dayes fancies, was foresaid of all favour by the unhappie approch of her father, who furnised with all worldly policies to preuent what he mislyked, and compasse that he suspected: perceiving by his daughters solome aspects, some secret sorrow ye troubled her, having remembred that axiome of the Philosophers, that dreames are the prefigurations of dayes forowe, watched his time so neerely, that euen at that verie instant he entered the chamber of his daughter, when drowned in her sweet delightfull dreames, she bega at his entrie to cry out thus. O fortunate Forbonius! which her father marking verie precisely, and concluding whereupon the sly tooke his holde faite, awaking his daughter on a sodaine, verie cunningly compassed her thus.

O my Prisceria, let it not seeme straunge vnto thee, to beholde thine aged Fathers vnaccustomable acceffe, since he is now perplexed with vnacquainted feares. Alas! my daughter, thy father seeing thee beautifull, is not carelesse of thy comfort, neither can he that laboured to bring thee to lyght, suffer thee to passe thy dayes in loathsome mislyke. At this instant when I entered thy chamber, in thy dreame (as me seeme) thy soule be-tokening (as it fluid seeme) some daies forowr or pleisure, exclaimed thus: O fortunate Forbonius, thou knowest how hatefull the person thou diddest name is to thy father, who if he be fortunate in thy dowrie, I loue him: I shal esteeme him vnfortunate in the faavour thou wilt assure him: who beeinge a collop of my flesh, wille not allowe of that, which is loathsome to thy father: O Prisceria Soldunius seeth, and thy secrete dreames bewraie that the fortunacie of Forbonius, is eyther vnfortunate for thy selfe, or not allowable by thy Fathers opinion.

H. iiij. Thy
The History of

Thy change of constitution, thy hidden sorrowe, my swéet child made me suspiouis, but now the verie true messenger of thy minde confirming me, I must without circumstance conclude, that Prisceria loueth her fathers enimie, that Prisceria desirèth Forbonius fauour, and detesteth her fathers choice, which if it be so, O my daughter, I feare me thy loue will not be so fauourable, as my disdaine bitter, wherefore if thou art intangled, since thou knowest my opinion, forbeare, or if no wisedome will conclude thee within limites, my displeasure shall exclude thee from out all benefit of my fauour. Choose now Prisceria, whether with calme perswaions thou wilt yéield to my bent, or by vnaccustomed displeasure bee pertaker of thy Fathers wrath.

Upon these conclusions, Prisceria all abashed, shaking of the drowsinesse of her dreaming, made aunswere to Soldunius in these tearmes.

These straunge suppositions, my good Father, argue the slender opinion of your self, who by the uncertainest signs yt may be, confirme your opinion as you please. In my dreames you sayd I called Forbonius fortunate, and may it not bee, that as my tongue vterred yt it thought not, your minde imagineth that which is not? counting euery lyght shadoawe a substaunce, and euery little similitude of truth, an unoubted demonstration. Did I call thine enimie fortunate? Truely Father I feare me I might iustly conclude it, for he poore Gentleman little dreameth on displeasures, when at such time as rest should occupy your fenes, you most troualle in your rancour: by certaine tokens as you saie, you conclude, that I am affectionate, and by this silly conclusion of a dreame, you inferre an unoubted truth, that I am enamoured with Forbonius, and if perhaps the necessitie of the fates be such, Prisceria shall finde her selfe happie in louing Forbonius, by those meanes her
of Forbonius and Prisceria.

her Father may cease rancour, and take rest, and his daughter satisfied with that she seeketh for, be no farther troubled with dreaming fantasies.

Soldanus perceiving by these speeches the certainty of his daughters affection, as one altogether enraged, calling vp his wife, and raising his seruants, left the silly maid all amazed at his sudden departure, whereas the old man exclaiming vppon the disobedience of his daughter, and thundering out many reuenges against poore Prisceria, caused his horses to be faddled, and perforce (contrarie to her expectaion) made her bee conveyed to Farmusium, a manor house of his owne, a place for the slytariness more fit for a Typhon, then conuenient for a beautifull Ladie, the onely companie there being shepheardes, who vpon the Vast mountaines recorded the praise of the Countrie fauourer Pan, and the rurall amitie betwenee them, and their Countrie lasses. Thus from fately Court, from the regards of her sweeet friend, from the pleasures that follow the Citie, her companions were rurall maidens, her retinue frolickke shepheardes: whose flight capacitie not yeelding anie comfort to allaiie the Gentlewomens sorowings, made her (to her more hart griefe) continue her pensuenesse, and sup vp her conceiued sorow in silence. But to repeat the moane on the other side that amorous Forbonius made, when by certain report he had notice of his mistres departure, were wonderfull, who beeing in himselfe altogether confounded, not knowing where to finde her out which was the onely mistres of his fantasie, Lord with how many sighes breathed he forth his sorrowe, and compassed on euerie side with dispairing ioyes, in the verie same garden where tofore hee repeated his pleasures, hée in these waylefull tearmes recounted his miseries.

Alas vnfortunate Aegyptian, whose faithful affections are so immutable, as thy naturall colour is vnstainable.

How
The Historie of

How injurious are the destines? that granting theee life, they dayly haffen thy destruction, that vouchsafing theee plesure, they suffer it not to be permanent: that admitting theee the benefit of beauties good grace, they depriue theee of the possession and blessing of that thou de-sirest. Alas! what shall befall me? when the glorie of my eyes are dimmed? when the pleasures of my heart are determined? whè the whom I loue neerest, is farther off frō my pres缩减? whè yè injurious repulses of yè father, makes every attempt of Forbonius vnfortunate. Wo is me, what way may I imagin to make an end of my mis-erie? Should I with dispairing rashnesse finisht vp the Catastrophe of my troubles? Should I béeing bereft of her by whom I liue, dispossesse my selfe of that she moost doth like? Should I in making my selfe onelye fortunate by yè alaie of my forrows, leaue Priseria to her dai-ly mournings, both to lament my deceasure, & her froward destinie? no Forbonius, it is but vaine quiet that is to her discontentment, who béeing equally inthralled wè thy selfe, will as willingly be pertaker of thy torment as thy self. But why waile I thus in feminine forow, when my happinesse is to be accomplisht by manly at-tempt? Soldunius rigour hath caueld Priseria absence, yet cannot the fathers displeasure determine the daugh-ters loue, she liueth to thy with Forbonius, she loueth to thy weale Forbonius, she wilbe constant til death Forbo-nius, why shouldest thou then leaue her vnfought for, Forbonius? Attempt vain man, to seke out thine assured, let not the distance of place difanull thy good hap? Soldunius banishment is concluded within the limites of Aegypt, and since it is so, either Forbonius will atteine her he desireth, or reuenge the vniuert rigour of an inju-rious Father.

Vpon this resolution, as a man quite dispossessed of himselfe, he hafted to Apollonius, recounting vnto him how all things had fortuned, beseeching him (not without
Forbonius and Priceria.

without foison of teares) to seke out by art where Prisceria was conuenant, and to direct him by counsell, who altogether was confounded with dispaire. Apollonius by exteriour signes conceiving the interiour heartes-grieve, and seing the poore young Gentleman martyred so miraculously, comparing times and revolutions, attained to the knowledge of her abroad, and concluding in himselfe to comfort him, which almost dispaired, hee spake thus to Forbonius.

My good friend, whence groweth it, that neyther the nobilitie of thy auncestors? nor thy forepaased attempts? neither the benefit of thy mistres fauour can confirme theee, but that thou wilt be carefull for that which thou haft alreadie almost compassed. Pluck vp your heart my sweete Forbonius, for thy Prisceria is not farre from theee. Farmusium a manner house of her Fathers, feated East out of this Citie, whereas she is so circumspectly lookt into, that by anie means, vnlesse by secret and conuenient pollicie, thou canst come to the accomplishment of thy desire. Thou must therefore atyre altogether like a shepheard, depart this citie, and by some conuenient meanes procure the keeping of some one Farmers sheepe, which is resident among those mountaines, by whose meanes thou shalt fall in acquaintance with the garden of thy mistres, called Sotto, and hauing conuenient occasion to fatifie thy affection, possesse thy selfe of y° thou haft long desired.

Forbonius concluding his replie with hartie thanks, sodainly departed, & remembring himselfe of one Corbo, a tennaunt of his, which had his mantion house verie conueniently, feated hard by the mannor house of Soldunius, he hastily shaped his journey vnto him, & making him priuie to y° he desired, & swearing him to be constant & continue secret, he betooke himselfe to y° keeping of his tenants sheepe, & not forgetting to drive his flocke neere vnto the lawnd wheras Soldunius seruants grafed their I. sheepe,
The Historie of

sheep, he so demeaned himselfe, that not onely he attayned the favor of Sotto which he sought for, but also for his curteous affabilitie was accounted of among ye whole troupe of heard men for ye best singer, & ye tunablest Musition. His Aeglogs were so delectable, & the deliverie of them so delicate. Wherupon by good fortune it so fel out, ye Forbonius vnnder the coulourable name of Arualio, was desired by Sotto, to refort vnto ye major house, who informed him of all ye had hapned, telling him of the careful demeanour of his forrow young mistres, who pleased with nothing but with solitarie musick, pined her selfe awaye with melancholy, & not without cause, (said he,) for my old master hath forbidd me admittinge of any one to her presence, not suffering her to passe the limits of my warie eie: nor allowing her to walke wout ye castell walls for her recreation. For my sake therfore chaunted her some melodie, & refort with me to a conveneint arbour within our garden, whereas she walking for her recreation, may perhaps take some delight in thy forrowfull mournings, in ye they most fit her fantasie. Forbonius as willing to wend, as he desirous to perfwade, accompanied Sotto to Farnosium, wher hauing a place appointed him to apply his Aeglogs, and the Goddesse before him whom he should devise vpon, she vnnder these secrets described his passions.

A Midst these Mountaines on a time did dwell,
A lovely shepheard who did beare the bell.
For sweete reports and many louing layes:
Whom while he fed his flocke in defart wayes,
A netheards daughter deckt with louely white,
Behelde and loude the laffe Corinna hight.
Him sought she oft with many a sweete regard,
With sundrie tokens she her futes preferd,
Her care to keepe his feeding flocke from stray,
Whilst careless he amidst the lawnes did play.

Her
Forbonius and Prisceria.

Her swéeete regards she spenpt vpon his face,
Her Countrie cates she sent to gaine his grace,
Her garlands gaie to decke his temples faire,
Her doubled sighs beftowd on gliding aire,
Her pleasant kiffe where she might steale a touch,
Corinna's zeales to Corulus was such.
He wanton shepheard glorying in her sute,
These signes of zeale to folly did impute:
Not waying of her many louing sightes,
Her watrie eyes, her secret moane by nights:
Her carelesse comfort in her fruitfull ewes,
Her monefull Aeglogs full of carefull shewes,
But scorning that, (which might that Godhead moue,
Who in a shepheards forme, for Ioues behoue,
Did charm the watchman of the heifer faire,
For whose behoofe the thunder left the aire.)
He left the place where she did loue to bide,
And draue his flocke another way beside.
Whose dire difdain (the God that kindles loue,
And makes impressions straungly from aboue
Misliking) strake with fancie at that flower,
The silly shepheard wounded by his power.
Now sought for that which he tofore did shun,
And now the heat of fancie firft begun,
To straine a yeelding in his reftlesse minde:
Such are the wounds that passe from fancie blinde,
That Corulus will now Corinna woe,
Though earft he loathd and scorned so to doe.
Now she that sought with many a swéeete aspeet,
Is fude to now by him that did negleect.
Now bountifull is swéeete Corinna's grace,
Now like the Sunne in welkin shines her face,
Her eyes like Gemini attend on Ioue,
Her stately front was figured from aboue,
Her daintie nofe of Iuorle faire and sheene,
Bepurfurare with ruddie roses beene.

I. ij. Her
The Historie of

Her chérie lips doth daunt the morning hiew,
From whence a breath so pleasant did infall,
As that which laide faire Pšèches in the vayle,
Whome Cupide woode and woed to his auayle.
Within the compass of which hollowe swèete,
Those orient ranks of siluer pearles doe méete,
Prefixing lyke perfection to the eie,
As siluer colde amidst the summers skie:
For whence such wordes in wisdome couched be,
As Gods from thence fetch their Philosophie:
Her dimpled chin of Alabaster white,
Her stately necke where nature did acquite
Her felse so well, as that at sodaine sight,
She wisht the worke were spent vpon her felse,
Her cunning thus was showde vpon the shelve:
For in this pile was fancie painted faire,
In either hand an afure pipe the bare:
By one repeating many a swèete confent,
By other comfort to the heart the sent.
From which a seemely passage there doth show,
To strangers pleasures that are plait alow,
Like to the forrowe Phaeton did leue,
Amidst the welkin when he did receiue,
His Fathers charge, and set the world on fire:
In this faire path oft paced swèete desire,
At euerie turne beholding with delight,
That Marble mount that did affect the sight.
Of virgins waxe the swèet impression was,
The cunning compass thereof did surpass,
For art concluding all perfections there,
Wrote this report, All graces bideth here.
Which Cupide spying built his mansion fo,
As scorning those swèete graces to bestoe
On mortall man, with bowe ibent doth waite,
Least love should steale impressions by deceit.

And
Forbonius and Prisceria.

And wondring at the crispéd coment faire,
In thought concludes it méeter for the aire
Then mortall mould: next which the stately thies,
Like two faire compaft marble pillers rife,
Whose white dooth staine the daintie driuen snow:
Next which the knées with luftie bent below
Conioynd with nerues and cords of Amber swéete,
This stately pyles with gladsome honour gréeete,
Such stately knées as when they bend a lite,
All knées doo bend and boow with strange deylght.
Her calues with stranger compass doo succéed,
In which the asures streames a wonder bréeede,
Both art and nature therein laboured haue,
To paint perfection in her coulours braue,
Next which, the pretie ground worke of the pile,
Doth shew it selse and wonder doth beguile,
The ioyntes whereof combind of Amber swéete,
With corall cords, yeeld bent to féemely féete.
From which, whose lift to lift his gasing eye,
Shall greater caufe of wonder foone espie.
When on the backe he bends his wauering looke,
In which the worke and taſke Diana tooke,
When with Arachne for the prize she straue,
Both art and nature there excelled haue.
Where from Pigmalions image féemely white,
Where close conueiaunce passing Gordians plight,
Where lousely Netlar drinke for all the Gods,
Where euerie grace is staine there by ods.
Will not contenent with gasing looke for more,
And spie those armes that stand his fight before,
Which for their mould the Egyptian wonders passe,
Which for their beautie staine the Christall glasse,
Which in their motion maifter natures swéete,
Where blushing streames present a secrets meete,
Will now amaze, conclude at laft of this,
That in the hands all grace concluded is.

I. iii. Where
The Historie of

Where Nature limits ever fall time,
Where Fortune figures pleasure in her prime,
Whence spread those fingers tipt with Iurie,
Whose touch Medusas turne may well supplie,
Where to conclude as now the shepheard seemes
All grace, all beautie, all perfections seemes.
Thus Corulus with many secret thoughts,
Diuines on her whom erft he set at naughts:
And softe by scorch of inward shrowded fire,
He seeke for her his fancie did require.
Who fraught with woes in secret shrowdes renude,
Her silent grieve vnfure of that infude.
Her Corulus with warie search at laft
At fodeine found: and as a man agast
At that he saw, drew backe with feare, and than
Remembring of his woes his fute began:
O sweete Corinna blessed be the foyle
That yeelds thee rest amidst thy dayly toyle,
And happie ground whereon thou fatest fo:
Blest be thy flocke, which in these lawnes doo go,
And happie I, but hauing leaue to looke:
Which saide, with feare he paw'd, and bloud forsooke
His paliye face, till thee that wrought the fire,
Restorde the red, and kindled sweete desire.
And with a bashfull looke beholding him,
Which many months her pleafant foe had bin:
She cast her armes about his drooping necke,
And with her daintie fingers dawde him vp.
And kifing of his paliye coloured face,
(Like as the Gods) by touch did foone displace
The sourre, that alterd the poore shepheards sweete,
When thus she gan her Corulus to grutte:
O lounely shepheard happie be the hower,
In which (I know not by what secret power)
Forbonius and Prisceria.

The Gods haue sent thée hether to thy frend,
Alas what griewe shoulde Corillus offend?
Whom fairest Nymph might well a liking lend.
Thy graiing Ewes with vdders full of milke,
With fruitfull sheepe and wooll as softe as silke,
Take glory in the fatnesse of this foyle
And praise theyr Maistres care and busie toyle:
And now accuse thée of thy drooping mone,
Tis but enough for me to wayle alone
For why Corinna onely haplesse is.
Poore Corillus at laft reuïde by this,
Gan sighing silence now to interrupt
And banish feare which did his hope corrupt.
And thus he said: O Nymph of beauties traine,
The onely cause and easer of my paine:
Tis not the want of any worldly ioy,
Nor fruitlesse brée of Lambs procures my noy,
Ne sigh I thus for any such mishap:
For these vaïne goods I lull in fortunaes lap.
But other grêefes and greater cause of care,
As now Corinna my tormenters are.
Thy beautie Goddresse is the onely good,
Thy beautie makes mine eyes to streame a flood,
Thy beautie breaks my woonted pleasent sleepe,
Thy beautie causeth Corillus to weepe:
For other ioyes they now but shadowes be,
No ioye but sweete Corinna loue for me.
Whereon I now beseech thée, by that white
Which staines the lilly, and affects my sight,
By those faire locks whereas the graces rest,
By those sweete eyes whereas all pleasures rest:
Doo yeeld me loue, or leau me for to die.
Corinna studious for to yeeld reply,
With many teares bedewed the shepheards face,
And thus at laft she spake: O happy place,
The Historie of

The which the Gods appoynted for my good.
What blesse Nimph within this sacred wood
Hath pleaded poore Corinthus lawfull caufe?
Or be they dreames that now my fancie drawes?
O Corinthus ne readst thou fue to me,
Nor spend the teares for to accepted be,
Since long ere this I would haue bent to bow,
If modoft feare could well haue taught me how.
In happie bonds of Himen I am thine:
No plead thou grace to her that dooth incline.
Thus with a kisse she sealed vp the deed:
When as the shepheard glad of happie speed
Embracing her he had desired long,
Gan call for grace to her he so did wrong.
Confirmed thus with mutuall glad consent,
They finisht vp the marriage that they ment.
Great was the day, and every field compère
Delighted in the pleasure of his deere.
Poore I alone in sad lamenting layes,
Depruied of the pleasure of my dayes,
In carefull tunes in breife concluding thus:
O happie times and planets gracious.
When in a mirrour beautie did behold
The hidden woes, my muse could wel vnfold:
And with a liking looke shape some replie.
But woe is me, since fathers crueltie
In changed formes hath altred termes of fute,
And altering place hath made my Goddesse mute.
Who honouring Pan, may hap the perfon fee,
Whom habit strange perfwades it should be me.

His delectable Aeglogue finishe by the amorous
Forbonius gaue occasions to Prisceria to satisfie
the thoughts that then troubled her fantasie. For com-
founded in her selve, not knowing what to conclude of
Forbonius and Prisceria.

that the shepheard Arualio had reported, yet welnigh perfwades that the reporter was he she liked off, with a feemely grace, not minding to incurre the lightest sup-pition, turning toward Forbonius, whose hand was on his half-penie, shee sayd thus.

Gentle shepheard, that Nymph thou louest shuld alter from womanhood, that considering thy true zeale, & exquisite proportions, would not requite thy loyalte, with the benefit of her loue. Truly Madame (aumes-red the imagined Arualio, and I thinke my selfe gracious in this, that for her whom I loue I am enioyed this torment, wherevpon turning himselfe a side, and drying vp the teares which should bewray his fancie, he was at last known by Prisceria, who altogether amazd at the preference of Forbonius, forgetting welnie the infortunacie she was intangled in, cast her armes about his necke, yet colouring with a feemly disdain to shadoow her opinion, and blindfold subtilly Sotto, shee sayde thus. Truly shepheard, if I may preuaile with thy mistres, thou shalt not be vnrewarded for this curtesie: & Madame (saied Forbonius) might I counsell your Ladis-ship, you shoulde not forrow for that maye be compaied at your pleasure.

This saied, Sotto taking Arualio by the hand, tooke his leaue of his young Mistresse thus: My young Ladie, I as studious of your pleasure as may be, haue brought you this young shepheard to laugh at, & if his musick like you, you shall haue euer day at the least a lay or two. And hie in shalt thou doo me noe smale pleasure saied Prisceria? & to with a feemly regard shaping a loth departure, ye two shepherds resorted to their flocks, Arualio altogether amazed at his mistres beautie, and Sotto very iocond he had fitted his young Ladies fancy so well: whervpon ye old shepheard, turning to our solitarie & distressed Arualio, saied thus, What makes thee thus follow my youthly compere? ceafe to greue thy selfe.

K.
The Historie of

selfe about those thinges that may be compassed, if thou loue, time shal eate out that which Treacle cannot, and thou shalt either be fortunate in possesting hir thou desird, or in ouerpassing thy passions with good government, leave loue to thofe that like her. Auralio not to seeke of curteous humanitie, gaue him this aunswere. O Sotto, it is not the loue that gréeueth me, but the meanes to compass loue: I labour not to attain loue, but to posseffe the profits of my long seruice in loue: as for time, it may worke wonders in them that are repulsed: but when Cupid is gracious, and occasions unfortunat, thinke you ye this is not a bitter sower? Yes, but answered Sotto, & if it be so Auralio plucks vp thy sprights, and doubt thou not, but if thou prooue diligent in pleasing my young mistresse, I meane not to be idle, if I may know whom thou likest of. As for that doubt not, saide our disguised Forbonius, for since I know by thy onely meanes my loue is to be compassed, I wil not stick in so flight a pleasure to profit, when as by thy meanes I may onely succour my selfe. In such lyke termes passing ouer their werisome walke: At last they betooke themselues each of them to the folding of their sheepe, for it was weneie night, and the Sunne was steepe-d in the Ocean: whervpon Auralio the shepheard, comming now Forbonius indeedede, hafted him home unto his Tenants houfe, making him both priuie of his happie fortune, and concluding with himselfe howe to performe that he wished for, and for that long traualye requieth some quiet, he betooke himselfe to rest: where recompencing al his nights wakings, with a quiet sleepe. At dawne of day he returned in his counterfeit habite vnto the field, and vnfolding his flocke, he draue them into those pastures, that wer adjoyning to Sottos walk: who no sooner spied Auralio, but saluting him very curteously, he earnestly intreated him, (settting all excuses apart)
Forbonius and Prisceria. 34

apart) to go to Farnusfum, and in the best sort that hée might to solace the vnfortunate Prisceria, who onely wayting that occasion, commending his flocke to the ouer-fight of the old man, & accompanied with Saraca the daughter of the old Sotto, he was presented to his de-

fire, within the castle, who by the absence of Sotto, find-
ing all occasions to serue her turne, hauing sent fillye Saraca about some fleueleffe arrant, she taking the oc-
casion proferred, said thus to Forbonius: Blest be that swete conceipt of thine (O my friend) which to the vn-
fortunate rigour of my father, hath adapted so convenient an end. Now maist thou with as great pleasures enioye thy deired, as with deepe perplexities thou haft sorrowed in her absence. Now neither distance can feuer vs from imbracing, nor the watchfull eye of my father, intercept thee of thy wish. Sée hère thy Prisceria, who though the Fates worke never so contrarie, will live to Forbonius, and onely loue Forbonius.

This said, with many kisstes comforting him which was almost overcomme with pleasaunt imaginations, she was returned this aunfwere by her most assurred fauourer.

O Prisceria, if ouerpressed with manye suspitious thoughts, if made pertaker of the infernall tortures in Phlegston, if subiect to the punishment of the Daugh-
ters of Danaus, or affixed to the torture that martere-
th Titius, I shoule be confirmed by this onely benefit in opinion, and made constant in all misfortunes, yea, euen to overcomme the insupportable trauailes of the fi-
sters, and be enabled with constancie to subdue all tor-
ments what so euer, by remembrancte onely of one grattious regard. It is neither thy fathers rancor sweet Prisceria, nor distance of place, nor any one occasiö what so euer, can either sequeste me of my hope, nor thee of the possession of thy wish'd: caft off therefore all doubt of

K. ij.
The Historie of

of after dole, & assure your self, that as this plesure hath his originall this present instant, so by my meanes ere long it shalbe continued for everlafting memory. Paf-
ing the time in such like pleasures, and miniftering a remedie vnto each others torments, I cannot tell, whether by the iniquitie of deftenie, or otherwise: Solduni-
us learning out Forbonius departure, and fuipitious of his forward attempts, at that very instant arrived at Farnufium, when the two amorous couple, little doub-
ting his fodaine approch, were coasted with this fower, in midft of all their swete, that the enemie of their ple-
fures euene then entred the Caftle, when as it seemed the fates had prefixed them that conueniencie & oppor-
tunitie to alaye their long forroweing. The brute of whose aduent brought to the eares of Prifceria, Lorde how she was confounded in her self, how diufmaid was Forbonius at that instant, how at y* very time were they both asonied, when moft circumspection shold be had: so that scarce they had then dried vp their teares, when as Soldunius entring the chamber, quickely discouered the whole counterfaite (for iealous eyes inflamed with rancour pretermit nothing) whereupon the olde man at firft, nothing at all deluded by the straunge habite, spying out their procedings, laying violent hands on Forbonius caufed him forcibly to be conveyed to the strongest tower in the Caftle, and tournynge himselye to Prifceria, he began thus.

O thou wicked and vngracious mayd, degenerating from the Nobilitie of thy auncestours, and led by vn-
feemly affections, not directed by the likings of thy ten-
der parents, in what tearmes shuld I accufe thee? or be-
fty. Woe is me, that am inforced to be an cie witnesse of mine owne forow, & to behold y* with mine eyes, that I hate in my heart: Is this the reward of breading children? Is this the benefite that is reapt by ifue? Are these the plesures that befall Parentes?
of Forbonins and Prisceria.

O Soldunius, happy hadst thou bene, if either Prisceria had beeene vnborne, or thou vnmarried, by the one thou shouldest haue escaped this present miferie, by the other prevented the vntoward sorrow that now confoundeth thee. Is thy loue to be fixed there where I hate? or shuldest thou be amorous of him who is odious to thy Fa-
ther? O vile wretch borne among the Hircan Tygres, which respecting not thy Fathers felicitie, overburthened his olde yeares with vnlooked for calamitie: but if euer iust Gods pittied a lawfull complaint, I doubt not but they that minister iustice to all men, wil wreak the injurys thou haft done to me.

Thus sad, he fayd down altogether confounded with melancholie. When as Prisceria finding occasion to speake for her selfe, began thus.

Who seakest O father, to prevent the destinies, labo-
reh in vaine, and who indeauoureth to alter nature, as he fuiteth against the streme, so must he peri in his owne ouerweening: the Gods haue concluded our loue, and will you being a creature seke to infringe it? A-
lafe my father, why shouldest my pleasure be your discom-
fort? or that by which I liue, prove that which moist you hate? Doe not you herein breake nature? who laie vi-
olent hands on your owne flesh, and seke to alter that by rigor, that was ordained by diuine instinct? O lette your rancor ouerlip (my good father) and if euer hum-
ble fute prevailed with an honourable minde, cease to hate him whom I loue: and couple vs both together, whom the Gods hauing ioyned in an assured league of friendship, it cannot be but iniuistice to alter their pro-
cedings.

Soldunius not able to digest the furie of his passion,
nor willing to weigh of the submissiue request of his daughter, interrupted her thus: And is it not sufficient or theee (vaine wench as thou art) to passe the limites of nature? but to continue thy error too? Thinkeft thou to

K. iij. compasfe
The History of

compass me with teares, who without sighes cannot
call to memorie thy escape? no Priscaria, both thou shalt
fée, and that varlet shall knowe, that my displeasure
will not be finished but w^t bloud, nor my anger satisfied,
till I haue confounded him, who hath discomforted me.
Wherupon flinging out of the chamber in a great rage,
and fastening both boltes and lockes, he with his traine
reforted to the imprisonned poore shepheard, his capi-
tall enimie Forbonius, whom after he had taunted with
these vniust tearmes, he proceded further to this vniust
reuenge: Thou cursed and abominable caitife, is it
not sufficient by the injuries of thy Father Chunamos,
to movie my patience, but that thou in perfon must vo-
lute my daughter? Thinkest thou that the Gods detest
not these injuryes? when as with wicked attemptes
thou bewitchest the daughter, and massacrest the Fa-
ther? naie nether in iustice will they pretermit the of-
fence, nor will nature suffer me to beare with thine
errorre: prepare thy selfe therefore to make him recom-
pipe with thy bloud, whom thou haft troubled with thy
attempt.

Forbonius confounded with sorrowe, and amazed at
this austere judgement, yet remembrring the nobilitie
that was alwayes accounted in him, aunswered him
thus.

Although enraged rancour hath made thee passe the
limits of honour, (O Soldunius) yet passe not so farre in
thy resolutions, as to staine the dignitie of thy person,
with the martyrdom of a guileffe Gentleman. If I
did hate thy daughter, that lyttle enuye that grewe by
my Fathers displeasure, might by reason grow to deepe
and rooted mallice, but when I loue Priscaria, why
shoulde I be contempned of Soldunius? It should seeeme
that loue was not accompted lothsome among the gods,
when as prefixing a punishment to all escapes, they
prefcribe an honour to this: chiefly concluding it to be

82
of Forbonius and Prisceria.

a vertue: whereupon thou must conclude, that eyther thou contemnest the decrees of the Gods, or measurest all thinges by thine owne mallice. Thou threatnest me with death (vaine man) and I weigh not the dissolution of my bodie: for this I assure thee, as long as I may live, I will honour Prisceria, and being dead, my ghost shall persecute thee with revenge, and prosecute my affections towarde my best beloued. So Prisceria lyue, Forbonius careth not to dye, the onely memorie of whome shall make mee constaunt in misfortunes, and willing to withstande the brunt of thy crueltie: whereupon my conclusio is, that if Soldanius for faithful assurance wil become a friendlye allower of Forbonius, he which by reason of the mallice of his Father had once cause to hate him, will now honour him, and that strife which separated two so noble families, shal now be finisht in our happy marryage: if this like not, procede as thou pleasest. In granting mee favour, thou shalt finde honour, in bereauing mee of lyfe, thou shalt finish all my misfortunes.

The discourse of Forbonius thus ended, Soldanius began thus, after ye he had somewhat digested his choler: Although Forbonius the inuuryes thou haft offered me, together with former displeasures, be sufficient to continue my resolution, yet weygingh with my selfe that it is vaine to alter that which is prefixed by destinye, wonne by reason which directeth all men, and by the tender loue I beare my Daughter, which shoulde preuayle with a Father: I yeelede thee thy loue to injoye in chaust wedlocke, and wheres thou lookedst I shoulde bee thy tormentour, loe I am nowe contented to be thy unlooked for Father. Whereupon taking Forbonius by the hand, and conueying him to Priscercias chamber, hée confirmed the Gentleman in his former purpose, and his daughter of his assured fauour.
The History of

ving these kind of tearmes to discouer his intention: My daughter, that father that euen now hainously mislik't of thy lover, now gloryeth in thy lyking, & he which whilome hated Forbonius, now vouchsafeth him his son in lawe: wherevpon comfort your selues with mutuall solace, & to morrow we will to the Citie to finish vp y* ceremonies. The two louers compassed with incredible pleasures, & not able to suppresse the affections that possest thê, but by breaking out into speech: they both humbled thêselves to aged Soldansius, returning him by y* mouth of Forbonius these thanks. O noble gentleman, it may not be erpressed by tongue, what I imagine in heart, who by your means, of the most vnfortunatest man that liueth, am become the only happie man of the world: notwithstanding this in lew of all fav'our I wil retourne you, that both by that meanes all priuate quarrells shal ceaze betweene our two families, and you registred in our Aegyptian Records, for the onely peace-maker of Memphis. In these sweete speaches over passing the daie & night, the next morrow the whole traine posteth to Memphis, whereas by the high Priest of the Sun they were solemnly espowsd, and after many sores were recompened with nuptiall pleasure. Now Ladies and Gentlewomen, I must leaue this to your consideraition, whether the louers for their constancie are more to be commended, or the olde man for his patience more to be wondered at: I leaue you to fit that conclusion, till you haue read what is written, promising you that if my rude discourse haue wrought you anye pleasure, I will both labor hereafter to serue all occurrences, and so fixe my studies as they shall not farre differ from your fantasies: and thus craving you to winke at an errour, and commend as the cause requireth, I take my leaue: willing to be made priuie if I haue anye wayes trauayled to your contentment.

FINIS.
MY mournfull Muse Melpomine drawe néeere,
Thou faddest Ladie of the sistors thrée,
And let her plaints in paper now appéere:
Whose teares lyke Occean billowes séeme to bée:
And should I note the plaintiffs name to théé?
Men call her Truth, once had in great request,
But banisht now of late for crafts beheft.

Amidst the ref that set their pen to booke,
She pickt me out to tell this wofull tale,
A simple Poet, on whose workes to looke,
The finest heads would thinke it verie stale:
Yet though vnworthie, to my friends auaile
I take the toile, and praié my Muses aide:
To blazon out the tale of Truth dismaide.

Such time as Phæbus from the couloured skie,
Did headlong driue his horses t'ord the West,
To suffer horned Luna for to prie,
Amidst the duskie darke, new rafide from rest,
As I in fragrant fields with woes opprest:
Gan walke to driue out melancholy grieue,
Which in my heart at that time had the chéeze.

It was my hap faft by a riuers side,
To heare a rufull voice lamenting thus,
You iulling streames, euen as your waues diuide:
So breakes my heart with passions perilous,
Which faine I would vnto the world discusse,
Were anie héere for to recount my moane,
Whose wofull heart for inward grieue doth grone.

Which
Truths complaint

Which sayd, she cast her dewed eyes at kance,
And spying me, gan rowse her heauie head,
And praide me pen her fad and heauie chance,
And she recounted it that present sted,
I did agree, and graunting Truth me fed
With these reportes, which I set downe in vearfe,
Which greues my Muse for sorrowes to rehearse.

Whilome (deere friend) it was my chaunce to dwell,
Within an Iland compass with the waue,
A safe defence a forren foe to quell.
Once Albion cald, next Britaine Brutus gaue,
Now England hight, a plot of beautie braue,
Which onely foyle, shold seeme the seate to bée,
Of Paradys, if it from finne were fée.

Within this place, within this sacred plot,
I first did frame, my first contented bower,
There found I peace and plentie for to float,
There justice rulde, and shinde in euerie stowre,
There was I lou'de and sought too euerie howre,
Their Prince content with plainnesse loued Truth,
And pride by abstinence was kept from youth.

Then flew not fashions euerie daie from Fraunce,
Then sought not Nobles nouells from a farre,
Then land was kept, not hazarded by chaunce,
Then quiet minde preferud the soile from iarre,
Cloth kept out colde, the poore releued were.
This was the stait, this was the luckie stowre,
While Truth in England kept her stately bowre.

Iustice did never looke with partiall eyes,
Demosthenes was never dum for golde,
over England.

The Princes cares were ope to peants cries,
   And false suspect was charely kept in holde,

Religion flourisht, living were not solde
For lucre then, but glune by desart,
And each receu'd, & preach't with zealous hart.

Then learning was the Loadstone of the land,
   Then hus bandman was free from shiftes of lawe,

Then faithfull promisk stooed in steed of band,
   The Drones from busie Bée no Mel could drawe,
   Then loue, not feare, did kéepe the state in awe:
Then, then did flourish that renowned time,
When earth and ashes thrufted not to clime.

For as the horse well mand abides the bit,
   And learnes his stop by raine in riders hand,

Where mountaine colt that was not falled yet,
   Runnes headlong on amiddst the fallowed land,
   Whose fierce resift scarce bends with anie band:
So men reclaimde by vertue, tread aright,
Where led by follies, mischiefes on them light.

Vse masters all, vse nurtereth mortall wayes,
   Vse, vse of good, continues happie state,
Vse, vse of mee, made England then haue praise,
   But since abuse hath banisht me of late.
   Alas! the while, there runnes another rate,
Which while by sad insight I looke into,
I see the want of those that have to doe.

And yet I see not Sodome: some are good,
   Whose inward bowels dayly melt in mone,
To see how Britane now is raging wood,
   Hard hearted, flintie minded, all in one,
   Bent to abuse, and leaving me alone.

L. iij.                         Alone-

87
Trueths complaint

Aloney lead with carelesse shew of peace,
Whereas secure regard doth finne increase.

Some, some there be whom zeale hath swallowed vp,
    Firft, blessed Prince, of whom I finde reliefe,
Some noble peeres that taft errors cup,
    Some godly Prelates in the Church are chéeafe,
Some Lawiers lead by zeale, lament my greefe.
Some Merchants follow God, not swallow golde,
Some countrie Swains loue truth you may be bolde.

Yet as great store of Darnell marres the seeld,
    Which else would spring within a fertile field:
And as the fruitfull bud is choakt by weede:
    Which otherwise a gladsome grape would yeeld,
So sometimes wicked men doe ouerweeld,
And keepe in couert those who would direect,
The common state, which error doth infect.

Yet Truth must yeuer alter from his name,
    Good Prince sayd I, ye good: what of her selfe?
And that is good, for Princes that doe frame.
    Themselves to priuate good, doo subiects good,
Yet that's not that fame goodnesse I would name:
Good Prince, good people, that's the good I craue,
Of Princes goods, that goodnesse would I haue.

For as the great commaundre of the tides,
    God Neptune can allay the swelling seas,
And make the billowes mount on either sides:
    When wandering keeles his cholar would displease:
So Princes may stirre vp and soone appease,
The commons heart to doe: and to destroy
That which is good, or this, which threatens anoy.

For
For common state can nevereways amisse
    When Princes liues doo leuell all a right,
Be it for Prince that England happie is,
    Yet haplesse England if the fortune light:
That with the Prince, the subiects seeke not right,
Unhappie state, unlucky times they see,
When Princes liues and subiects disagrée.

I know not I whence come these wayward woes,
    Whose sodaine showes portend this sodain change,
Yet dooth me doubt such sodaine fears disclose,
    As Truth this present doubts the sequell strange:
When stable head, last staleffe members range,
I fear me: as the buildings trust to sand,
So evry blast will stroy with turne of hand,

When as in Court by proud contempt I see,
    A fashion feedes the fancies now a dayes,
When as in Court promotions passed be
    By self opinion: oft the wise man sayes,
The turns are strange, and fauour soone decayes:
And those whom fortune windeth now a floate,
By change of fauour, soone may change their coate.

When as election dooth but passe by fence,
    Then must I dèème the world is fed by showes:
When garish beautie causeth vaine expence,
    It seemes the man shoulde see, but little knowes,
Repentance is the fruite by louing growes:
So when in Court nought but such pleasures be,
Repentance must enfue we well may see.

But leaving Court, where though the bramble growes,
    Yet zealous care there lets her selfe I see,
  L. iij.
Tru\ths\ complaint

I doo in Court but now complaine of thos\e,
  Who pra\ctise that that fits not their degree:
  Whos\e vaine by powre full oft cor\rected be:
But now such colours cloake each bad pretence,
  Thos\e showes doo hold the wife in some sust\ence.

But I poore I, though gr\eeud at courtlike scapes,
  Lamenting there the lau\ish vaine expence,
Haue farther cause abroad to note escapes,
  Whos\e craf\t dooth k\eepe true meaning in sust\ence:
  And wily worldlings couer thos\e pretence
With holy shap\es, and in a holy coate,
  Dooth flattery prais\e thos\e men that swim a flota\e:

In Nobles train\es, who see\s not strange mif\de\e\es,
  Where each dooth gape and catch at pri\uate gaine,
And fl\ee\e the \Lord, who though he blindfold see\e\es,
  By oft attempts dooth barre them of their vaines,
  The painfull wretch who toiles with often paines,
He hath faire words, when flattrie \ucks the swe\e\e\e,
  Thus showes take place, and \Truths\ trod vnder see\e\e.

In Eng\land giftes can compas\e each reproo\fe,
  The bad for gold may foone be counted good,
The wicked gainer for the states behoofe,
  The blin\de\st buzzard to giue heau\e\nly food,
  The faintest heart in warlik\ft place hath stood:
And who giue\s most, hath now most store of farme\s,
  Rackt rents, the Lord with golden fuell warmes.

And Iu\stice fore I feare by powre is led,
  The poore may crie, and gladly cre\e\p to cro\fe,
The rich with wealth, though wealthie now are fed,
  The simple man now onely bears the losse,
  The Lawier he the golden crownes doth t\sse,

And
ouer England.

And now hath fées at will with cap and knée,
And each man cries, good fir come plead for me.

O sweete the time, when neither folly might
Mislead your hopes, nor alter olde decrees.
O happie Truth when as with sweete delight,
She laboured still far conscience not for fees.
O blessed time, when zeale with bended knées,
Gan bleffe the heauens, that bent their powres diuine,
The English hearts to wisedome to encline.

But now refusd, disdaind, and set at naught,
Inforst to seeke for rest in place vnknowne,
I wayle poore wretch, that no redresse is sought:
But well I wot, my greeses are not mine owne,
Some beare a part and helpe to waile my mone,
But all in vaine: such colours now are made,
That those would mend the misse, doo daunce in shade.

This said, bewetting all the place with teares,
And from her eyes expelling flouds of mone,
Her louely lockes bepried about her eares,
She waude her wings as willing to be gone:
And after pafe, she soard away anone,
And thus she said: You Illanders adieu,
You banisht me, before I fled from you.

Lenuoy. Beléeue me Countrimen this thing is true.

FINIS.
SCILLAES

METAMORPHOSIS

BY

THOMAS LODGE

REPRINTED FROM THE FIRST EDITION
1380

PRINTED FOR THE HUNTERIAN CLUB
1876
SCILLAES
Metamorphosis:

Enterlaced
with the vnsfortunate loue
of Glaucus.

Whereunto is annexed the delectable discourse
of the discontented Satyre: with sundrie other
most absolute Poems and Sonnets.

Contayning the detestable tyrannie of Dis-
daine, and Comical triumph of Constancie: Verie fit for young Courtiersto
peruse, and coy Damesto
remember.

By Thomas Lodge of Lincolnes
Inne, Gentleman.

O vita! misero longa, futili breuis.

Imprinted at London by Richard Fhones,
and are to be sold at his shop neere Holburne
bridge, at the signe of the Rose and
Crowne. 1589.
TO HIS ESPECIALL
good friend Master Rafe Crane,  

and the rest of his most entire wellwil-
lers, the Gentlemen of the Innes
of Court and Chauncerie. Thomas Lodge of Lincolnes Inne
Gent. Wifeth increase of
worship and continu-
ance in vertue.

Veete (Master Crane) I had
not thought at this instant to
have partaked my passions
with the print, whose discon-
tented thoughts so long in-
ured to obscuritie, were diuorfed many
yeares since, from vaine glories inordinate
follie: but the base necessitie of an extraua-
gant melancholie mate, that had no other
vnde of quod advicium attinet, but the fore-
stalling of other mens inuentions, made my
vnperfite Poems (in spite of waste paper) to
hazard an apprenticeship in Poules: so that,
that which in the first peeping foorth was

vwholie
The Epistle

wholie predestinate to your friendship, by an vnderhand mate, is made the mercinarie recreation of euerie ridiculous mate. Our wits now a daies are waxt verie fruitefull, and our Pamphleters more than prodigall; So that the postes which stoode naked a tedious non terminus, doa vaunt their double apparrell as soone as euer the Exchequer openeth; and euerie corner is tooke vp with some or other penile companion that will imitate any estate for a twopennie almes. I could afford you whole seruices of absurdities, that would disquiet the digestion of Arte vsq; ad nauseam, were it not that I pittie to particularize simple fellowes imperfections, and am altogether loath to adventure my paines in so vngratefull a Province. For transformed Scilla how euer the hapned now to bee disioyned from disdainfull Charybdis; thinke not, but if they have good shipping they wil meete ere long both in one shipp; and landed they had at this instant, in one and the selfe same bay, if Scilla (the vnfortunater of the two) had not met with a needie pirate by the way. Ariend shee is,
Dedicatorie.

is, though in a contrary coast, but so wrackt, and weatherbeaten, through the unskilfulness of rough writers, that made their poast haste passage by night, as Glauce would scarce know her, if he met her: yet my hope is Gentlemen, that you will not so much imagine what she is, as what she was; insomuch as from the shop of the Painter, she is falne into the hands of the stainer. Thus referring the support of my credit, & the inability of my verse to your ingenious opinions, I bid you farewell till the next Term; at which time I hope to entertain your seuerall delights, with farre better discourses, and bee suppliant to my good friend Master Crane, in some or other more acceptable Poem. In the meane time let my appliable voluijfe, intitle me to your curtesie: whose I am during life in all enterchangeable dutie.

Your friend assured
Thomas Lodge.
The most pithie and pleasant

*Historie of Glaucus and Silla.*

Wailing alone (all onely full of grieue)
Within a thicket nere to Jhes floud,
Weeping my wants, and wailing scant relieve,
Wringing mine armes (as one with sorrowe wood);
The piteous streames relenting at my mone
Withdraw their tides, and ftaid to heare me grone.
From foorth the channell, with a forroweing crie
The Sea-god *Glaucus* (with his hallowed heares
Wet in the teares of his fat mothers dye)
With piteous lookes before my face appeares;
For whome the Nimphes a mossie coate did frame,
Embroidered with his *Sillas* heauenly name.

And as I fat vnder a Willow tre, e
The louelie honour of faire *Theitis* bower;
Repose his head vpon my faintfull knée:
And when my teares had caft their stormie shower
He dried my cheekes, and then bespake him so,
As when he waill I straight forgot my woe.

Infortunate, why wandreth thy content
From forth his scope as weared of it felse;
Thy bookees haue schoeld thee from this fond repent,
And thou cant talke by profe of wauering pelse:
Vnto the world fuch is inconstancie,
As sapp to tre, as apple to the eye.

Marke how the morne in rofeat colour shines,
And straight with cloudes the Sunnie tract is clad;
Then see how pomp through waxe and waine declines,
From high to lowe, from better to the bad:
Take moist from Sea, take colour from his kinde,
Before the world deuoid of change thou finde.


**Glaucus and Scylla.**

With secret eye looke on the earth a while,
Regard the changes Nature forceth there;
Behold the heauens, whose course all seeme beguile;
Respect thy selfe, and thou shalt find it cleere,
    That infantlike thou art become a youth,
    And youth forespent a wretched age enfu'th,
In searching then the schoolemen's cunning noothes,
Of heauen, of earth, of flowers, of springing trees,
Of hears, of mettall, and of Thetis floats,
Of lawes and nurture kept among the Bees:

Conclude and knowe times change by course of fate,
    Then mourne no more, but moane my haples state.
Here gan he pause and shake his heauie head,
And fouled his armes, and then vnfoould them straight;
Faine would he speake, but tongue was charm'd by dread,
Whil'st I that sawe what woes did him awaite,
    Comparing his mishaps and moane with mine,
Gan smile for joy and drie his drooping eyne.
But (loe) a wonder; from the channels glide
A sweet melodious noyse of musicke rose,
That made the streame to dance a pleasant tide,
The weeds and fallowes nere the bancke that groes
Gan sing, as when the calmest windes accord
to greete with balmie breath the fleeting sorde.

Upon the fluer bofome of the streame
First gan faire Themis shake her amber locks,
Whom all the Nymphs that waight on Neptunes realm
Attended from the hollowe of the rocks.

In briefe, while these rare parragons assemble,
The warie world to touch their teates doo tremble.
Footing it feattie on the grassie ground,
These Damseels circling with their brightsome faires
The loue-sickke God and I, about vs wound
Like starres that Ariadnes crowne repaires:
    Who once hath seene or pride of morne, or day,
    Would deeme all pompe within their cheekes did play.

Nais
Glaucus and Scilla.

Nais faire Nimph with Bacchus iuorie touch,
Gan tune a passion with fuch sweete reports,
And euerie word, noate, sigh, and paufe was fuch,
And euerie Cadence fed with fuch confortes,
    As were the Delian Harper bent to heare,
    Her flatelie straines might tempt his curious eare.
Of loue (God wot) the louelie Nimph complained:
But so of loue as forced loue to loue her;
And euene in loue fuch furious loue remained,
As searching out his powrefullshaft to proue her,
    He found his quier emptied of the best,
    And felt the arrowe sticking in his breast.
Vnder a Popler Themis did reposhe her,
And from a brier a sweettfull branch did plucke:
When midst the brier ere she could scarce supposse her
A Nightingale gan sing: but woe the lucke;
    The branch fo neere her breasft, while she did quicke her
    To turne her head, on sodaine gan to pricke her.
Whillst smilling Clore midst her enuious blushes,
Gan blame her seare and pretillie said thus;
Worse prickes than these are found among these bushes,
And yet fuch prickes are scarcellie feard of vs.
    Nay soft (said Chelis) prickes doo make birds sing,
    But prickes in Ladies bosomes often stinge.
Thus left they on the Nightingales report,
And on the prickle of the Eglantine
On Nais fong, and all the whole confort
In publique this sweete sentence did asigne;
    That while some smile, some sigh through change of time;
    Some fsmart, some fport amidst their youthlie prime,
Such wreathes as bound the Thebans iuorie brow;
Such gay trickt garlands pleit these iollie Dames;
The flowres themselues when as the Nimphes gan bowe,
Gan vaille their creftes in honour of their names:
    And smilde their sweete and woed with so much glée,
    As if they said, sweet Nimph come gather mee.

A 3

But
Glaucus and Silla.

But penciue Glaucus passionate with painings,
Amidst their reuell thus began his ruth;
Nymphes, fli thse Groues late blased with my plainings,
For cruell Silla nill regard my truth:
   And leaue vs two conforted in our gronings,
   To register with teares our bitter monings.
   The floods doo faile their course to see our crosse,
   The fields forfake their greene to heare our griefe,
The rockes will wepepe whole springs to marke our losse,
The hills relent to floure our scant reliefe,
   The aire repines, the penciue birds are heauie,
   The trees to see vs paind no more are leauie.
Ay me, the Shepheards let their flockes want feeding,
And flockes to see their palie face are forie,
The Nymphes to spie the flockes and shepheards needing
Prepare their teares to heare our tragicke story:
   Whilste we surprisde with grievse cannot disclose them,
   With sighing with the world for to suppoze them.
He that hath seene the sweete Arcadian boy
Wiping the purple from his forced wound,
His pretie teares betokening his annoy,
His sighes, his cries, his falling on the ground,
The Ecchoes ringing from the rockes his fall.
The trees with teares reporting of his thrall:
And Venus starting at her loue-mates crie,
Forcing hir birds to haft her chariot on;
And full of grievse at laft with piteous eie
Seene where all pale with death he lay alone,
   Whose beautie quaild, as wont the Lillies droop
   When waftfull winter windes doo make them floupe:
Her daintie hand addrest to dawe her deere,
   Her rofcall lip aliend to his pale cheeke,
   Her sighes, and thenn her lookes and heauie cheere,
Her bitter threatnes, and thenn her passions meeke;
   How on his seneles corpes she lay a crying,
   As if the boy were then but new a dying.

He,
Glaucus and Silla.

He that hath vewd Angelica the faire
Befraught with fancie nere the Cappian springs:
Renting the treffes of her golden haire,
How on her harpe with pitious notes she sings
   Of Rolands ruth, of Medors false depart,
   Sighing each ref from center of her heart.
How now the writes vpon a beecheen bow
Her Medors name, and bedlam like againe
Calls all the heauen to witnes of his vow,
And straight againe begins a mournefull straine,
    And how in thought of her true faith forsoken
    He fled her bowres, and how his league was broken.
Aye me who marks her harpe hang vp againe
Vpon the willowes watered with her teares,
And how she rues to read her Rolands paine,
When but the shadowe of his name appeares;
    Would make more plainings from his eyes to flee
    Than teares distill from amber weeping trée.
He that hath knowne the passionate mishappes
That nere Olimpus faire Lucina felt
When as her Latium louse her fancie trappes,
How with suspech her inward soule dooth melt:
    Or markt the Morne her Cephalus complaining,
    May then recount the course of all our paining.
But tender Nimphes to you belongs no teene;
Then fauor me in flying from this bower
Whereas but care and thought of crosse been,
Leawe me that loose my selfe through fancies power,
    Through fancies power which had I leve to loose it,
    No fancie then should see me for to choose it.
When you are fled the Heauen shall lowre for sorrowe,
The day oercast shalbe bedtime with fable,
The aire from Sea such streaming showres shall borrow
As earth to beare the brunt shall not be able,
    And shippes shall safely saile whereas beseorne
    The ploughman watcht the reaping of his corne.

Goe
Glaucus and Scilla.

Goe you in peace to Neptunes watrie found,
No more may Glaucus play him with so prettie;
But shun refor where solace will be found,
And plaine my Scillaes pride and want of pittie:

Alas sweet Nymphs my Godhead's all in vaine,
For why this breft includes immortall paine.
Scilla hath eyes, but too sweete eyes hath Scilla;
Scilla hath hands, faire hands but coy in touching;
Scilla in wit surpasseth graue Sibilla,
Scilla hath words, but words well forde with grutching;

Scilla a Saint in looke, no Saint in scornig;
Looke Saint-like Scilla, leaft I die with mourning.
Alas why talke I of Sea-god ceafe to mourne her,
For in her nay my ioyes are euer ceasing:
Ceafe life or loue, then shall I never blame her;
But neither loue nor life may finde decreasing.

A mortall wound is my immortall being,
Which pafteth thought, or eyes aduised seeing.
Herewith his faltring tongue by fighs opprest.
Forfooke his office, and his bloud reforred
To feeede the heart that wholly was diffrested,
Whilst pale (like Pallas flowre) my knee supported
His feeble head and arme, so full of anguish,
That they which sawe his forrowes gan to languish.

Themis the coyft of this beautese traine
On hillie toppes the wonderous Moly found,
Which dipt in balmie dewe the gan to straine,
And brought her present to recure his wound:

Clore she gathered Amaranthus flower,
And Nais Aiax blossom in that flower,
Some chase his temples with their louelie hands;
Some sprinkle water on his pale wan chekkes,
Some wepe, some wake, some curse affections bandes;
To see so young, so faire, become so weake;

But not their pitious hearbs, or springs haue working,
To caze that heart where wanton loue is lurking.

Naithles
Glaucus and Scilla.

Naithles though loath to shewe his holy kindnes
On euerie one he spent a looke for favour,
And prayed their pardon vouching Cupids blindnes,
(Oh fancies fond that naught but sorrowes favour);
     To see a louley God leaue Sea Nimphes so:
     Who cannot doome vpon his deadly woe?
Thems that knewe, that waters long restrained
Breake forth with greater billowes than the brookes
That sweetely float through meades with floweres distained,
With cheerefull laies did raife his heauie looks;
     And bad him speake and tell what him agreeu'd:
     For grieses disclow'd (said she) are foone releu'd.
And as she wifht so all the rest did woe him;
By whose incessant suites at laft inuited,
He thus discovered that which did vndoo him,
And orderlie his hideous harmes recited,
     When first which fingers wagge he gan to stille them,
     And thus with drieie tearmes of loue did fill them.
Ah Nimphes (quoth he) had I by reason learnt
That secret art which birds haue gaind by fence,
By due foresight misfortune to preuent;
Or could my wit controule mine eyes offence:
     You then shoulde smyle and I shoulde tell such storie,
     As woods, and wauues shoulde triumph in our glories.
But Nereus daughters, Sea-borne Saints attend,
Lake breeding Geefe when from the Easterne clime
They lift vnto the westerne waters wend
To choose their place of rest by course of time,
     Approaching Taurus haughtie topped hill
     They charme their cackle by this wondrous skil.
The climing mountaine neighbouringe ayre welnie,
Hath harbored in his rockes and desart haunts
Whole airies of Eagles preft to flye
That gazinge on the Sonne their birth right vaunts,
     Which birds of nowe with deadly fewde pursue
     The wandering Geefe, when so they prest in vewe.

B These
Glaucus and Scilla.

These fearefull flitting troopes by nature tought,
Passing these dangerous places of pursuit:
When all the defart vales they through haue sought,
With pibbles stop their beakes to make them mute,
And by this meanes their dangerous deathes preuent
And gaine their wished waters of frequent.
But I fond God (I God complaine thy follie)
Let birds by senfe exceede my reason farre:
Whilom than I who was more strong and iollie
Who more contenmed affections wanton warre ?
Who lesse than I lou’d luftfull Cupids arrowes ?
Who now with curse & plagues poore Glaucus harrowes.

How haue I leapt to heare the Tritons play
A harsh retreat vnto the swelling flouds ?
How haue I kept the Dolphins at a bay,
When as I ment to charm the wanton moods?

How haue the angrie windes growne calme for loue,
When as these fingers did my harpe stringes moue?

Was any Nimph, you Nimphes was euery any
That tangled not her fingers in my treffe ?
Some well I wot and of that some full many
Wifht or my faire, or their desire were leffe

Euen Ariadne gazing from the skie
Became enamorde of poore Glaucus eye.

Amidst this pride of youth and beauties treasure
It was my chaunce, you floods can tell my chancing,
Flëeting along Sicillian bounds for pleasure,
To spie a Nimph of such a radiant glancing,

As when I lookt, a beame of subtilly firing
From eye to heart incenst a deepe desiring.

Ah had the vaile of reason clad mine eye,
This foe of freedome had not burnt my heart:
But birds are blest, and most accurst am I
Who must reporte her glories to my smart,

The Nimph I fawe and lou’d her, all to cruell
Scilla, faire Scilla, my fond fancies iuell.

Her
Glaucus and Scilla.

Her haire not trust, but scatterd on her brow,
Surpassing Hiblas honnie for the view,
Or softned golden wires; I know not how
Loue with a radiant beautie did pursue
   My too iudicall eyes, in darting fire
   That kindled straignt in me my fond desire.
Within these snares first was my heart intrapped,
Till through those golden throwdes mine eies did see
An yuorie shadowed front, wherein was wrapped
Those pretie bowres where Graces couched be:
   Next which her cheekees appeard like crimfon silk,
   Or ruddie rose bespred on whiteste milk.
Twixt which the moxe in lonely tenor bends,
   (Too traitrous pretie for a Louers view:)
Next which her lips like violets commends
By true proportion that which dooth infue;
   Which when they smile, presens vnto the eies
   The Oceans pride and yuorie paradice.
Her pollisht necke of milke white snowes doth shine,
As when the Moone in Winter night beholdest them:
Her breast of alabaster cleere and fine,
Whereon two risting apples faire vnfolds them
   Like Cinthias face when in her full she shineth,
   And blushing to her Loue-mates bower declineth.
From whence in length her armes doo sweetly spred
Like two rare branchie spales in the Spring,
Yeelding five louely sprigs from euerie head,
Proportioned alike in euerie thing;
   Which featly sprout in length like springborne frends,
   Whose pretie tops with five sweet roses ends.
But why alas should I that Marble hide
That doth adorn the one and other flank,
From whence a mount of quickned snow doth glide,
Or els the vale that bounds this milkwhite banke,
   Where Venus and her sisters hide the fount,
   Whose louely Nectar dooth all sweetes surmount.

B 2

15
Glaucus and Scilla.

Confounded with descriptions, I must leave them;
Louers must thinke, and Poets must report them:
For sly wits may never well conceaue them,
Unlesse a speciall grace from heauen confort them.
Aies me, these faire attending Scilla won me:
But now (sweet Nimphes) attæd what hath vondon me.
The louely breast where all this beautie rested,
Shrowded within a world of deepe disdain:
For where I thought my fancie should be feasted
With kinde affect, alas (unto my paine)
When first I woode the wanton straight was flying,
And gaue repulse before we talkt of trying.
How oft have I (too often have I done so)
In silent night when euerie eye was sleeping,
Drawne neere her caue, in hope her loue were won so,
Forcing the neighboring waters through my weeping
To wake the windes, who did affliet her dwelling
Whilst I with teares my passion was a telling.

When midst the Caspian seas the wanton plaid,
I drew whole wreaths of corall from the rockes:
And in her lap my heauenly presents laid:
But she vnkind rewarded me with mockes.

Such are the fruites that spring from Ladies coyng,
Who smile at teares, and are intrapt with toying.

Tongue might grow wearie.to report my wooings,
And heart might burst to thinke of her deniall:
Nay none be blamde but heauen for all these dooings,
That yeeld no helps inmidst of all my triall.

Heart, tongue, thought, pen nil serue me to repent me,
Disdaine her selfe should strive for to lament me.

Wretched Loue let me die, end my loue by my death;
Dead alas still I liue, filie my life, fade my loue.
Out alas loue abides, still I joy vitall breath:
Death in loue, loue is death, woe is me that doo proue.

Paine and woe, care & grieve euery day about me houers:
The but death what can quel al ye plages of haples louers?
Aies
Glaucus and Scilla.

Aies me my moanings are like water drops
That neede an age to pearce her marble heart,
I fow'd true zeale, yet fruitlees were my crops:
I plighted faith, yet falsehoode wrought my smart:
I praifd her lookes, her lookes despised Glaucus,
Was euer amorous Sea-god scorned thus?§
A hundereth swelling tides my mother spent
Vpon these lockes, and all hir Nimphes were prest,
To pleit them faire when to her bowre I went:
He that hath seene the wandring Phæbus crest,
Toucht with the Chrifall of Eurotas spring,
The pride of these my bushie locks might sing.
But short discourse befeemes my bad successe,
Eache office of a louer I performed:
So ferently my passions did her presse,
So sweete my laies, my speech fo well reformed,
That (crueil) when she sawe naught would begile me
With angrie lookes the Nimph did thus exile me.
Packe hence thou fondling to the westerne Seas,
Within some calmy riuers throwd thy head:
For neuer shall my faire thy loue appease,
Since fancie from this boosome late is fled:
And if thou loue me shewe it in departing:
For why thy presence dooth procure my smarting.
This saied with angrie lookes, away she hafted
As fast as flye the flouds before the winds:
When I poore foule with wretched sorrowes wafted,
Exclaimde on loue, which wit and reaon blinds:
And baniisht from hir bowre with wofull poafting
I bent my felte to seeke a forreine coafting.
At laft in wandring through the greater Seas
It was my chance to passe the noted streights:
And wearied fore in sekeing after eafe,
Amidst the creekes, and watrie coole receits.
I sped from farre by helpe of fonnie beames
A fruitefull Ile begirt with Ocean streames.

B 3  Westward
Glaucus and Scilla.

Westward I fleeted, and with heedfull eie
Beheld the chalkie cliffs that tempt the aire,
Till at the last it was my chance to spie
A pleasant entrance to the flouds repaire;
    Through which I prest, and wondring there beheld
    On either side a sweete and fruitfull field.

Ise (the Ladie of that louely streme)
Made holiday in view of my refort;
And all the Nimphes of that her watrie realme
Gan trip for ioy, to make me mickle sport:
    But I poore soule with no such ioyes contented,
    Forsooke their bowers, and secretely lamented.

All solitarie rome I heere about,
Now on the shoare, now in the streme I weepe,
Fire burnes within, and gaftly feare without,
No rest, no eafe, no hope of any sleepe:
    Poore banisht God, heere haue I still remained,
    Since time my Scilla hath my futes disdained.

And heere comfort I now with haplesse men,
Yeelding them comfort, (though my wound be curelesse)
Songs of remorfe I warble now and then,
Wherein I curfe fond Loue and Fortune durelesse,
    Wan hope my weale, my truist but bad aduenture,
    Circumference is care, my heart the center.

Whilst thus he spake, fierce Ate charmde his tongue,
His senses faile, his armes were folded straignt,
And now he sighes, and then his heart is stung;
Againe he speakes gainst fancies fond deceit,
    And teares his treffes with his fingers faire,
    And rents his roabs, halfe mad with deepe dispaire.

The piteous Nimphes that viewd his heauie plught,
And heard the sequell of his bad successe,
Did loose the springs of their remorcesfull sight,
And wept fo sore to see his scant redresse:
    That of their teares there grew a pretie brooke,
    Whose Chrifall cleares the clowdes of penciue looke.

Alas
Glaucus and Scilla.

Alas woes me, how oft haue I bewept
So faire, so yong, so louely, and so kinde,
And whilst the God vpon my bosome slept,
Behelde the scarres of his afflicted minde,
    Imprinted in his yuorie brow by care,
    That fruitlesse fancie left vnto his share.
My wandring lines, bewitch not so my fences:
But gentle Mouse direct their course aright,
Delayes in tragick tales procure offences:
Yeeld me such feeling words, that whilst I wright
    My working lines may fill mine eyes with languish,
    And they to note my mones may melt with anguish.
The wofull Glaucus thus with woes attainted,
The pencieue Nymphes agreeued to see his plight,
The flouds and fields with his laments acquainted,
My selfe amazd to see this heauie fight;
    On sodaine Thetis with her traine approched,
    And grauely thus her amorous sonne reproched.
My sonne (saiued he) immortall haue I made thee,
Amidst my whatrie realmes who may compare
Or match thy might? Why then should care inuade thee,
That art so yong, so louely, fresh and faire.
    Alas fond God, it merits great reprouings
    In States of worth, to doate on foolishe louing.
Come wend with me, and midst thy Fathers bowre
Let vs disport and frolick for a while
In spite of Loue: although he powte and lowre,
Good exerxe will idle lufts beguile:
    Let wanton Scilla coy her where she will,
    Lieue thou my sonne by reaions leuell still.
Thus saiued the Goddesse: and although her words
Gawe signes of counfaile; pompe and maieftie:
Yet nathelesse her piteous eye affords
Some pretie wittesse to the standers by,
    That in her thoughts (for all her outward shew)
    She mournd to see her Sonne amated so.

But
Glaucus and Scilla.

But (welladay) her words haue little force,
The haples louver worne with working woe,
Vpon the ground lay pale as any corfe,
And were not teares which from his eyes did flowe,
   And sighes that witnesse he enjoyed his breath,
They might haue thought him Citizen of death.

Which spectacle of care made Thetis bow,
And call on Glaucus, and command her Sonne
To yelde her right: and hir aduice allow,
But (woe) the man whom she fancie had vndone
   Nill marke her rules: nor words, nor weeping teares
   Can fasten counfaile in the louers eares.
The Queene of Sea, with all hir Nimphes affured
That no perfwasion might reléeue his care:
Kneeling adowne; their faltring tongues enured
To tempt faire Venus by their vowed praier:
   The course whereof as I could beare in minde
   With sorrowing sobbes they vtttered in this kinde.
Borne of the Sea, thou Paphian Queene of loue,
Mifris of sweete conspiring harmonie:
Lady of Cipris, for whose sweete behoue
The Seepeheards praise the youth of Theffallie:
   Daughter of Ioue and Sifter to the Sonne,
   Assiist poore Glaucus late by loue vndone.
So maist thou baine thée in Th'arcadian brookes,
And play with Vulcans riuall when thou lift,
And calme his jealous anger by thy lookes,
And knit thy temples with a roseat twift
   If thou thy selfe and thine almightie Sonne,
   Assiist poore Glaucus late by loue vndone.
May earth still praise thée for her kinde increafe:
And beastes adore thée for their fruitfull wombes,
And fowles with noates thy praifes never cease,
And Bées admire thée for their honnie combes:
   So thou thy selfe and thine almightie Sonne,
   Assiist poore Glaucus late by loue vndone.
Glaucus and Scilla.

No sooner from her reuerent lips were past
Those latter lines, but mounting in the East,
Faire Venus in her uiorie coacht did haft,
And toward those penceiue dames, her course addrest;
   Her doues so plied their wauing wings with flight,
   That straight the sacred Goddesse came in fight.
Upon her head she bare that gorgeous Crowne,
Wherein the poore Amyntas is a starr;
Her lovely lockes, her boosome hang adowne
(Those netts that first insnarr'd the God of warre:)
   Delicious louely shine her prettie eies,
   And one her cheekkes carnatoon cloudes arise,
The stately roab she ware vpon her back
Was lillie white, wherein with cullored silke;
Her Nimphes had blaz'd the yong Adonis wrack,
And Ledas rape by Swan as white as milke,
   And on her lap her louely Sonne was plaste,  
   Whose beautie all his mothers pompe defahte.
A wreath of roses hem'd his Temples in,
His tresse was curlde and cleere as beaten gold;
Haught were his lookes, and louely was his skin,
Each part as pure as Heauens eternall mold,
   And on his eies a milkewhite wreath was spred,
   Which longst his backe, with prettie pleits did shed.
Two daintie wings of partie coulored plumes
Adorne his shafters dallying with the winde;
His left hand weelds a Torch, that euer fumes:
And in his right, his bowe that fancies bind,
   And on his back his Quiuer hangs well stored
   With fundrie haftes, that fundrie hearts haue gored.
The Deities ariu'd in place desired;
Faire Venus her to Thetis first bespake,
Princesse of Sea (quoth she) as you required
From Cefion which my Sonne, my course I take:
   Frollick faire Goddeffe, Nimphs forfake your plaining,
   My Sonne hath power and fauour yet remaining.

   C  
   With
Glaucus and Scilla.

With that the reuerend powres each other kisst,
And Cupid smil'd vpon the Nimphes for pleasure:
So naught but Glaucus solace there was misst,
Which to effect the Nimphes withouten measure
Intreat the God, who at the last drewe nie
The place, where Glaucus full of care did lie,
And from his bowe a furious dart hee sent
Into that wound which he had made before:
That like Achilles sword became the teint
To cure the wound that it had caru'd before:
And soeinly the Sea-god started vp:
Reuiude, relieu'd, and fre from Fancies cup.
No more of loue, no more of hate he spoke,
No more he forst the sighes from out his breast:
His sodaine ioye his pleasing smiles prouoke,
And all aloft he shakes his bushie creast,
Gréeting the Gods and Goddessebeside,
And euerie Nimph vpon that happie tide.
Cupid and he together hand in hand
Approach the place of this renowned traine:
Ladies (said he) releaft from amorous band,
Receive my prifoner to your grace againe.

Glaucus gaue thankes, when Thetis glad with blisse
Embrast his neck, and his kind cheekes did kisse.
To see the Nimphes in flockes about him play,
How Nais kempt his head, and wash't his browes:
How Thetis checkt him with his welladay,
How Clore told him of his amorous vowes,
How Venus prais'd him for his faithfull loue,
Within my heart a fodein ioy did moue.
Whilst in this gleé this holy troope delight,
Along the streame a farre faire Scilla floated,
And coillie vaunt hir creast in open fight:
Whose beauties all the tides with wonder noated,
Fore whom Palemon and the Tritons danced
Whilst shee hir limmes vpon the tide advanc'd.

Whose
Glaucus and Scilla.

Whose swift approach made all the Godheads wonder:
Glaucus gan smile to see his louelie foe,
Rage almoast rent poore Thetis heart asonder:
Was neuer happen troope confused so
  As were these deities and daintie dames,
  When they beheld the cause of Glaucus blames.
Venus commends the carriage of her eye,
Nais vpbraides the dimple in her chinne,
Cupid desires to touch the wantons thie,
Close she sweares that euerie eie dooth sinne
  That likes a Nymph that so contemneth loue,
  As no attempts her lawles heart may moue.
Thetis impatient of her wrong sustained,
With enious teares her rofeat cheekes afflicted;
And thus of Scillas former pride complained;
Cupid (said she) see her that hath inflicted
  The deadlie wound that harnde my louelie sonne,
  From whome the offspring of my care begonne.
Oh if there dwell within thy breft my boy
Or grace, or pittie, or remorrfe (said she)
Now bend thy bowe, abate yon wantons ioy,
And let these Nymphes thy rightfull iustice see.
  The God soone won, gan shoote, and cleft her heart
  With such a shaft as caufd her endles smare.
The tender Nymph attainted vnawares,
Fares like the Libyan Lionesse that flies
The Hunters Launce that wounds her in his snares;
Now gins shee loue, and straight on Glaucus cries;
  Whilst on the shore the goddeses reioyce,
  And all the Nymphes afflict the ayre with noyse.
To shoare shee flitts, and swift as Affrick wind
Her footing glides vpon the yeelding graffe,
And wounded by affeckt recure to finde
She fadainely with sighes approch the place
  Where Glaucus fat, and wearie with her harmes
  Gan claspe the Sea-god in her amorous armes.

C 2

Glaucus
Glaucus and Scilla.

Glaucus my loue (quoth she) looke on thy louer,
Smile gentle Glaucus on the Nymph that likes thee;
But starke as stone fat he, and lift not prowe her:
(Ah silly Nymph the selfsame God that strikes thee
    With fancies darte, and hath thy freedome flaine)
Wounds Glaucus with the arrowe of disdain.
Oh kisse no more kind Nymph he likes no kindnes,
Loue sleepe in him, to flame within thy breeth,
Clere'd are his eies, where thine are clad with blindnes;
Fre'e'd be his thoughts, where thine must taste vnreply:
    Yet nil ke leau, for neuer loue will leau her,
    But fruiteles hopes and fatall happes deceauce her.
Lord how her lippes doo dwell vnpon his cheekes;
And how she lookes for babees in his eies:
And how she sighes, and sweares thee loues and leeckes,
And how she vowes, and he her vowes enuies:
    Trust me the eunious Nymphs in looking on,
    Were forst with teares for to assiust her mone.
How oft with blushes would she plead for grace,
How oft with whisperings would she tempt his eares:
How oft with Christall did she wet his face:
How oft she wipte them with her Amber heares:
    So oft me thought, I oft in heart desied
    To see the eend whereto disdain aspire.

Palemon with the Tritons roare for grieue,
To see the Mistres of their ioyes amated:
But Glaucus forcueth the Nymph, that waites reliefe:
And more she loues the more the Sea-god hated,
    Such change, such chance, such fortes, such stormes beléeue
    Poore silly wretch did hartely agreeue me.
As when the fatall bird of Augurie
Séeing a stormie dismall cloude arise
Within the South, forsetells with piteous crie
The weeping tempest, that on sudden hies:
    So she poore soule, in view of his disdain
    Began to descant on her future paine.

And
Glaucus and Scilla.

And fixing eye vpon the fatall ground,
Whole hoafts of flouds drew deaw from out her eyes;
And when through inward griefe the laffe did found,
The softned graffe like billowes did arise
    To woe her brefts, and wed her limmes so dainty,
    Whom wretched loue had made so weake and faintie,
(Ayes me), me thinks I see her Thetis fingers
Renting her locks as she were woe begun her;
And now her lippes vpon his lipping lingers;
Oh lingers paine where loue nill lift to mone her §
    Rue me that writes, for why her ruth deserues it:
    Hope needs must faile, where forrow scarce preferues it.
To make long tale were tedious to the wofull,
Wofull that read what wofull shee approoved:
In briefe her heart with deepe dispaire was so full,
As since she might not win her sweete beloued.
    With hideous cries like winde borne backe she fled
    Vnto the Sea, and toward Sicilia sped.
Sweete Zephyrus vpon that fatall howre
In haples tide midst watrie world was walking;
Whose milder sighes, alas, had little power
To whisper peace amongst the Godheads talking:
    Who all in one conclude for to pursue,
    The haples Nimph, to see what would ensue.
Venus her selfe and her faire Sonne gan hie
Within their iuorie Coach drawne forth by doues
After this haples Nimph, their power to trie:
The Nimphes in hope to see their vowed loues,
    Gan cut the watrie boasom of the tide,
    As in Cayster Phæbus birds doe glide.
Thetis in pompe vpon a Tritons back
Did poast her straight attended by her traine;
But Glaucus free from loue by louers wrack,
Sseeing me pencie where I did remaine,
    Vpon a Dolphin hortt me (as he was)
    Thus on the Ocean hand in hand we passe.

C 3

Our
Glaucus and Scilla.

Our talke midway was nought but still of wonder,
Of change, of chaunce, of sorrow, and her ending;
I wept for want: he said, time brings men vnnder,
And secret want can finde but small befriending.
    And as he said, in that before I tried it,
    I blamde my wit forewarnd, yet neuer spied it.
What néeede I talke the order of my way,
Discourse was steerefsman while my barke did faile,
My ship conceit, and fancie was my bay:
If these faile me, then faint my Mufe and faile,
    Haft brought vs where the haples Nimph foiourned,
    Beating the weeping waues that for her mourned.
He that hath seene the Northren blastes dispoile
The pompe of Prime, and with a whistling breath
Blaft and dispard the beauties of the soile;
May thinke vpon her paynes more worse than death.
    Alas poore Lasse the Ecchoes in the rockes
    Of Sicilie, her piteous plaining mockes.
Eccho her felse when Scilla cried out O lour!
With piteous voice from out her hollow den
Returnd these words, these words of forrow, (no lour)
No lour (quoth she) then fie on traiterous men,
    Then fie on hope: then fie on hope (quoth Eccho)
To euerie word the Nimph did anfwere so.
For every sigh, the Rockes returns a sigh;
For euerie teare, their fountaines yeelds a drop;
Till we at laft the place approached nigh,
And heard the Nimph that fed on sorrowes sop
    Make woods, and waues, and rockes, and hills admire
    The wonderous force of her vontam'd desire.
Glaucus (quoth she) is faire: whilst Eccho sings
Glaucus is faire: but yet he hateth Scilla
The wretch reportes: and then her armes she wrings
Whilst Eccho tells her this, he hateth Scilla,
    No hope (quoth she): no hope (quoth Eccho) then.
    Then fie on men: when she said, fie on men.

Furie
Glaucus and Scilla.

Furie and Rage, Wan-hope, Dispair, and Woe
From Ditis den by Ate fent, drewe nie:
Furie was red, with rage his eyes did gloe,
Whole flakes of fire from forth his mouth did flie,
      His hands and armes ibath'd in blood of those
      Whome fortune, finne, or fate made Countries foes.

Rage, wan and pale vpon a Tiger fat,
Knawing vpon the bones of mangled men;
Naught can he view, but he repinde thereat:
His lockes were Snakes bred foorth in Stigian den,
      Next whom, Dispair that deepe disdained elf
      Delightlesse liude, still stabbing of her self.
Woe all in blacke, within her hands did beare
The fatall torches of a Funerall,
Her Cheekes were wet, disparched was hir heare,
Her voice was shrill (yet loathsome therewith all):
      Wan-hope (poore foule) on broken Ancker fitts,
      Wringing his armes as robbed of his witts.
These five at once the sorrowing Nymph affaile,
And captiue lead her bound into the rocks,
Where howling till she strues for to preuaile,
With no auaille yet strues she: for hir locks
      Are chang'd with wonder into hideous sands,
      And hard as flint become her snow-white hands.
The waters howle with fatall tunes about her,
The aire dooth fcoule when as she turnes within them,
The winds and waues with pusses and bellowes skout her;
Waues storse, aire fcoules, both wind & waues begin them
      To make the place this mournful Nymph doth weep in,
      A haples haunt whereas no Nymph may keep in.
The Sea-man wandring by that famous Isle,
Shuns all with feare dispairing Scillaes bowre;
Nymphes, Sea-gods, Syrens when they lift to smile
Forfaake the haunt of Scilla in that floure:
      Ah Nymphes thought I, if euerie coy one felt
      The like misshappes, their flintie hearts would melt.

Thetis
Glaucus and Scilla.

Thetis rejoyst to see her foe deprest,
Glaucus was glad, since Scilla was enthrald;
The Nymphs gan smile, to boast their Glaucus rest:
Venus and Cupid in their throanes enfald,
At Thetis beck to Neptunes bowre repaire,
Whereas they feast amidst his pallace faire.
Of pure immortall Nectar is their drinke,
And sweete Ambrosia dainties doo repast them,
The Tritons sing, Palemon smiles to thinke
Upon the chance, and all the Nymphs doo haft them
To trick vp mossie garlands where they woon,
For louely Venus and her conquering Sonne.
From foorth the fountaines of his mothers store,
Glaucus let fie a daintie Chriftall baine
That washt the Nymphs with labour tir'd before:
Cupid hee trips among this louely traine,
Alonly I apart did write thisstorie
With many a sigh and heart full fad and forie.
Glaucus when all the Goddesses tooke rest,
Mounted vpon a Dolphin full of gle: 
Conueide me friendly from this honored feast,
And by the way, such Sonnets song to me,
That all the Dolphins neighbouring of his glide
Daunft with delight, his reuerend course beside.
At last he left me, where at firft he found me,
Willing me let the world and ladies knowe
Of Scilla's pride, and then by oath he bound me
To write no more, of that whence shame dooth grow:
Or tie my pen to Pennie-knaues delight,
But liue with fame, and fo for fame to wright.

Lenwy.

Ladies he left me, trust me I mislay not,
But so he left me, as he wil me tell you:
That Nymphs must yeeld, when faithfull louers straie not,
Leaft through contempt, almightie loue compell you
With Scilla in the rockes to make your biding
A curfede plague, for womans proud backsliding.

FINIS.
Glaucus complaint written
by the said Gent.

The Billowes that by windes asifting breath
Dooth beate upon the rocks at last doo pierce them:
Ah then (thou gentle offspring of my death)
Why faile my plaints when penciue I rehearse them
To wound thine eares? when as my words exceed them,
And that my sighes in stead of windes doo leade them.
Along the floods I wander all forlorn,
Nor may the Sea-nymphes s'miles enforce me play:
But if I think, I think upon thy scorne,
And if I wish, I wish my dismal day,
Oh fruits of love, oh powrefull course of paine!
That one should like the thing that hath him flaine.
Looke in my mothers Christall face, faire maide,
There read the story of my bitter state;
My tears her silver floatings haue alaid,
Her troubled looks foreshoew my wretched fate:
If not for me, yet mourn her bitter wweeping,
And pittie him whose heart is in thy keeping.
Take pittie Scilla, pittie thou thy lover;
For thou art faire, and beautie should have pittie,
Ahas she flies, perusiions cannot moue her,
She is too wanton, or too foolish wittie:
Along the floates the fcalie troopes encrease,
Yet nill she loue to maintaine natures peace.
Oh stepdame Nature haft thou shut these faires
Within the rampeir of so depe disdaine,
To kill a God with sorrowes and disorders:
Would God thy powre (to lessen all my paine)
Were dead in her; or fancies quencheth fire
Might from my brest with ceafeles course retire.

D

But
Glaucus complaint.

But all in vaine (so vaine is loues pursuite)
Trie I her eares, and tempt her hardned heart:
Cease wretched tongue, twere better still be mute,
Than tell a tale of griefe and endless smart.

To her that grounds her glories on disdain,
And takes a pride to viewe my bitter paine.
(Fond that I am) all these are faint supposes:
Imperious Loue (to shewe his endles power)
My tender and immortall heart encloes
Within the center of her louely lowre:

That all may see, Loues prison is her eie,
And Gods must stoope vnto his deitie.
Yet (Loue) allot prescriptions vnto woe;
Els will the lowre exceed the sweete by farre:
Or leuell pittie from thy lawles bowe,
That sorrowe in excessive, may cause a warre.

That may consume, if not confound my life;
And I may seeme to die amidst the strife.
The deafe nill heare: both she and Loue together
Haue made a match to aggreguate my grieue:
I see my hell, there rests no hope in either:
From proud contempt there springeth no reliefe,

What rests there then but since I may not gaine her,
In piteous tearmes and teares for to complains her.

FINIS.

The
The Discontented Satyre written by Thomas Lodge Gent.

S
Vch time as from her Mothers tender lap
The night arose, guarded with gentle winds:
And with her precious dew refresht the sap
Of bloome and barke (whilst that her mantle blinds
The vaile of heauen) and euery bird was still
Saue Philomele, that did bemoane her ill.
When in the West Orion lift aloft
His starrie crest, and smil'd vpon the Twins;
And Cynthia leemely bright (whose eie full oft
Had watcht her loue) with radiant light begins
To pierce the vaile of silence with her beames,
Sporting with wanton cléere on Ocean streams.
When little winds in beating of their wings,
Did woee the eies to leaue their wonted wake,
And all was hушt faue Zephyrus, that sings
With louely breathings for the Sea-nymphs fake:
My watchfull griefes perplext my minde so fore,
That foorth I walke my sorrowes to deplore.
The doaly season that resembled well
My drooping heart, gaue life to my lament:
Each twinkleling lamp that in the heauens did dwell
Gan rest his courfe to hearken mine entent:
Foorth went I still desiring on my feare
Distinguishing each footstep with a teare.
My working thought deluding of my pace,
At laft did bring me to a defart dale,
(By envious mountaines robd of Phæbus face)
Where growes no hearb to taste of deaws auaille,
In midst thereof, vpon a bed of mossie
A Satyre, did his restles bodie toffe.

D 2

Stearne
The discontented Satyre.

Stearne were his lookes, afflicting all the fields
That were in view; his bushie lockes vndreft
With terror hang, his hauour horror yelds,
And with the fight my forrowes were suppreft;
   So, neere I drewe, when sodenly he roafe,
   And thus in tearmes his purpose did disclose.
Blush daies eternall lampe to see thy lot,
Since that thy cleere with cloudy darkes is scard;
Lowre on faire Cinthia for I like thee not;
For borrowed beauties, merit no regard:
   Boast Discontent, naught may deprese thy powre,
   Since in thy selfe all grievse thou dost deouere.
Thou art the God whome I alone adore
Whose powre includeth discords all in one,
Confusions are thy foode and fatall store,
Thy name is feard where thou art most vnknowne;
   Thy grace is great, for fortunes laugh and lowre
As thyles them not, that glorie in thy powre.
The minde through thee diuines on endless things,
And formes a Heauen through others fond mislikes;
Time loathes thy haunt, yet lends thee many wings:
Refined wits against thy bulwarke strikes;
   And when their curious thoughts are ouerpast,
   They scorne their bookes, and like thy bent at last.
For who but thou can yeld them any gaine?
Depriue the world of perfect Discontent;
All glories end, true honor straight is slaine,
And life it selfe in errors course is spent,
   All toile dooth fort but to a forrie end,
   For through mislikes, each learnes for to commend.
What made fierce Phillips sonne to manage armes,
To vaile the pride of Persia by his sword,
But thou my God, that he by others harmes:
Might raise his feate: and thereby still afford
   A caufe of discontent to them that loft,
   And hate in him that by their powre was crost.

Let
The discontented Satyre.

Let enuie cease, what Prince can make it knowne
How dere he loues his best esteemed friends:
For were not some of purpose overthowne,
Who may discerne whereto true sauor tends:
    Thus Princes discontent dooth honor some,
    And others through their hatres to credit come.
Without thy helpe the Soldier shunnes the field:
You studeous Arts how fatall haps had you,
If discontented did not some succors yeeld ?
Oh fléeting Fame who could thy grace pursue:
    Did not my God send emulations out
    To whet the wits and pens of Pallas rout,
How could the Heauens haue retrograde aspects
Without thy helpe ? How might the Planets finde
Their oppositions, and their strange effects,
Vnlesse thy powre assisted euere kind :
    The aire by thee at first invente then voice,
    Which once reuerberate, straight yeelds a noice.
The pencile man that with a careles hand
Hath shaddowed Venus, hates his slack regard;
And all amaz’d doth discontented shand,
And mends the fame that he before had mard:
    Who sees not then that it was Discontent,
    That sight to eie, and perfect judgement lent ?
The schooleman that with heedlesse florish writes,
Refines his fault, if thou direct his eie:
And then againe with wonder he endites
Such sweete sententious lines, as never die:
    Lost in my selfe in praising of thy might,
    My speech yeelds vp his office to delight.
This said he siml’d, and on his restless bed
Reposde and tost his indisposed lims:
A world of thoughts still hammerd in his head,
Now would he sleepe, and straight his couch he trims:
    And then he walks, and therewith fits him downe:
    And faines to sing, yet endeth with a frowne.

D3  

33
The discontented Satyre.

I stood amaz'd and wondered at his words,
And sought to suck the soule from out his lips,
His rare discourse such wondrous ioye affords:
But vnawares, like lightfoote Fawne he tripts
   Along the lawnes: and I with watch forespent,
Drew home and vowde to honor Discontent.

FINIS. Thomas Lodge.

Sundrie sweete Sonnets
written by the said
Gent.

In praiie of the Countrey life.

Most happie blest the man that midst his countrie bowers
Without suspeit of hate, or dread of envious tongue
May dwell among his owne: not dreading fortunes bowres,
Farre from those publique plagues that mightie men hath stoong:
   Whose libertie and peace is neuer fold for gaine,
   Whose words doo neuer sooth a wanton princes vaine.
Incertaine hopes, and vowes, doo neuer harme his thought,
And vaine desires doo shunne the place of his repose;
He weepes no yeares misspent, nor want of that he fought,
Nor reapes his gaine by words, nor builds upon suppose:
   The stormes of troubled Sea do neuer force his fears, (ears,
   Nor Trumpets found dooth chang his sleepe, or charme his
Aimsions neuer build within his constant minde,
A cunning coy deceipt his foule dooth not disguise,
His firme and constant faith corruptions neuer blind,
He neuer waits his weale from princes wandring eyes:
   But living well content with euerie kinde of thing;
   He is his proper court, his favor, and his King.

His
Delectable Sonets.

His will (restrain'd by wit) is never for't awrie,
Vaine hopes, and fatall feares (the courtiers common foes)
(Afraid by his foresight) doo shun his piercing eye:
And naught but true delight acquaints him where he goes,
   No high attempts to winne; but humble thoughts and deeds.
The verie fruitses and flowers that spring from vertues seeds.

(O deities divine) your Godheads I adore
That haunt the hills, the fields, the forrests and the springs,
That make my quiet thoughts contented with my flore,
And fixe my hopes on heaven, and not on earthly things;
   That drive me from desires, (in view of courteys fairest)
   And drawe me to commend the fields and countrie life.

My thoughts are now enclose'd within my proper land,
And if my bodie sleepe my minde dooth take his rest,
My simple seale and love my dangers doo withstand,
The mornings pleasant ayer invites me from my nest,
   If weather was too warme I seek the silent shade,
   If frosts affliet, I strive for warmth by hunters trade.

Although my biding home be not imbost with gold,
And that with cunning skill my chambers are not drest,
(Whereas the curious eye my sundrie fights behold)
Yet feedes my quiet looks on thousand flowers at least,
   The treasures of the plaine, the beauties of the spring,
   Made rich with Roses sweete and euerie pleasant thing.

Amidst the palace brave pust up with wanton showes
Ambicions dwell, and there false favours finde disguise,
There lodge conjuring cares that hatch our common woes:
Amidst our painted feelds the pleasant Fayrie lies,—
   And all those powers divine that with vntruffed tresses,
   Contentment, happie love, and perfect sport professe.

So liuing, naught remains my solace to betray;
I heare the pleasant birds record their sacred siraines,
When at the mornings rife they blesse the springing day:
The murmuring fountains noise from out the marble vaines,
   Are pleasing to mine eares: whilst with a gentill fall
   They fleete from hie, and serue to wet the meads withall.

What
Delectable Poems.
What sport may equall this, to see two prettie doues
When neb to neb they ioyne, in fluttering of their wings,
And in their roundelaies with kisses seale their loues?
Then wondering at the gifts which happie nature brings;
  What sport is it to sleepe and slumber by a well,
  Whose fleeting falls mak's how, some lovely tale to tell?
Oh what content to see amid' the darke some night
(When as the setting sonne hath left the moone in place)
The Nimphes amid' the vales and groves to take delight,
To dance, to leap, to skip, with sweet and pleasant grace,
  To gie greeneme gowmes in sport, and in their tripping make
By force of footing all the springing graffe to quake.
Their daunces brought to end, I lift my lookes one hie
To see the horned moone, and deskant on her heu
Cleere siluer shining bright, and eftsoones then think I
Upon that hapie chance the Latmian shepheard knew:
  Then doo I wish my selfe as faire a friend as she,
  But watching I desire she might disport with me.
Thus mid' the silent night my selfe I doo content:
Then when as Phoebus beames our Hemisphere enflames,
A thousand change of sports for pleasure I inuent,
And feast my quiet thoughts with fundrie pleasant games,
  Now angle I awhile, then seek I for the chace,
  And straight my limerods catch the Sparrows on the place.
I like, and make some louse: but yet in such a sort
That naught but true delight my certaine fute pursues;
My libertie remaines, and yet I reap the sport;
Nor can the snares of louse my heedefull thoughts abuse:
  But when I would forgoe, I haue the power to flie,
  And flend aloofe and laugh, while others starue and die.
My sweete and tender flocks (my faithfull steed compaers)
You forrests, houls, and groves, you meads & mountains hie,
Be you the witnesse of my contented yeares:
And you O sacred powers vouchsafe my humble crie,
  And during all my dates, doe not these ioyes estrange;
  But let them stille remaine, and graunt no other change.

Finis.  

In
Poems.

In commendation of a solitarie life.

Not yet forfaken (gentle Muse) draw neere,
And helpe to wearie out these worldly thoughts;
Goe fit thy methode to my moodie cheere,
For why fond pleasure now preuaileth noughts:
   Since where content and wealthie state declines,
   The heart dooth droope, and dolefull be the lines.
For thy (fond man) why rest I not at laft?
My wings of hope are clipte by foule disgrace:
The siluer downe of age now flocketh faft,
Like moffe on oake to dwell vpon my face:
   And what with thought & time, through want & ruth:
   I challenge care for joy, and age for youth.
What fruites of former labours doo I finde?
My studious pen dooth traffique for a scorne:
My due deserts are but repaid with winde;
And what I earne, is nought but bitter mourne:
   In which accompt I reap but this aduife,
   To ceafe to clime, and liue contented wife.
But gentle Muse, where boadeth this content?
The Princes Court is fraught with endleffe woes,
Corruptions flocke where honors doo frequent,
The Cities swarme with plagues, with futes, with foes:
   High climing wits doo catch a fodein fall,
   With none of these Content lift dwell withall.
Ah beautie of the double topped hill,
Thou faddest sister of the sacred nine,
What fruitfull pleasance followeth now my quill?
What wondrous beauties bleffe my drooping eine?
   Even fuch as earft the shepheard in the shade
   Beheld, when he a Poet once was made.
Me thinkes I see the deserts fresh arraid,
New mantled in their liueries of greene,
Whose frolicke pride makes smiling heauen a paid;
Wherein the Nymps doo weare out their teene,
   Washing their iuorie in thofe murmuring springs,
   At whose kinde fall, the birds with pleasure sings.

E.
Poems.

See where the babes of memorie are laid
Vnder the shadow of Apollo's tree,
That pleit their garlands fresh, and well apaid,
And breath forth lines of daintie poecie:
   Ah world farewell, the sight hereof dooth tell,
   That true content dooth in the desert dwell.
See where a Caue presents it selfe to eie,
By Natures hand enforst in marble vaines;
Where climing Cedars with their shades denie,
The eye of day to see what there remains:
   A couch of mossie, a brooke of siluer cleere,
   And more, for fooe a flocke of fauage deere.
Then here (kinde Mufe) vouchsafe to dwell with me,
My veluet robe shalbe a weede of gray,
And leaft my heart by tongue betrayed be,
For idle talke I will goe fast and pray:
   No sooner saied and thought, but that my heart
   His true supposde content gan thus impart.
Sweete solitarie life thou true repose,
Wherein the wife contemplate heauen aright,
In thee no dread of warre or worldly foes,
In thee no pompe seduceth mortall sight,
   In thee no wanton eares to win with words,
   Nor lurking toyes, which Citie life affoords.
At peepe of day when in her crimson pride,
The Morne bespreds with roses all the waie
Where Phaebus coach with radiant courie must glide,
The Hermit bends his humble knees to pray:
   Blessing that God, whose bountie did bestow
   Such beauties on the earthly things below.
Whether with solace tripping on the trees
He sees the citizens of Forrest sport,
Or midst the withered oake beholds the Bees
Intend their labour with a kinde confront:
   Downe drop his teares, to thinke how they agree,
   Where men alone with hate inflamed be.
Poems.
Taste he the fruites that spring from Tellus woomb;
Or drinke he of the christall springs that flowes:
He thankes his God, and sighes their cursed doomb
That fondly wealth in sursetting beftowes:
And with Saint Hierom faith, The Desert is
A paradise of folace, ioy, and blis.
Father of light, thou maker of the heauen,
From whom my being well, and being springs:
Bring to effect this my defired steauen,
That I may leaue the thought of worldly things:
Then in my troubles will I bleffe the time,
My Muse vouchsafe me such a luckie rime.

Finis. T. L.

 Beauties Lullabie.

Hos ego vesiculas feci, tuli alter honores.

Gentlemen, I had thought to have suppressed this Lullabie in silence,
amongst my other papers that lie buried in oblivion: but the impudent
arrogancie of some more then infolent Poets have altered my
purpose in that respect, and made me set my name to my owne worke,
leaff some other vaine glorious Batillus should prejudice my paines, by
subscribing his name to that which is none of his owne.

Non mesure.

Lullabie Beautie, sweet Beautie lullabie;
To such kind of Infants sing lula would I.

Sweet, sweet desire that made my pleasant wondring eyes
To gaze on such a blazing farre, as dins the state of skies:
Whose feature while my Muse doth now delive upon;
Sweet Beautie rest thee still awhile, I shall have done anon.

First lulla to those lokkes deriv'd from Phoebus rayes,
Which fasten light in dimmeß lookes by vertue of their sprayes:
From whence her golden wiers Diana borrowed them,
When with Arachne at the loombe she strawe amidst the fen.

E 2  Next
Poems.

Next lulla to the front where onlie shrowdes the die,
Which ruddie Morrow borrowed then when Thetis she did spie
To hunt forbidden bed, whereas vermilion hue
Is sowne in sight, and every sense approves my censure true.

Next lulla to those statelie couerts of her eyes,
In which in Alabaster white dame Nature did Denise
A subtile frame of setted wiers, in such confused art:
As those that looke but on that worke amased doo depart.

Next lulla to those lamps, those twinkling stemmes of flate:
Wherof but one, doth dim the Sunne (both) Sunne & Moone do
On which while Ioue doth prie, the icelous Iuno chides. (mate,
Thus Gods & men admire at her in whom such beautie bides.

But he that doth but marke those rocks of marbel white;
Frö whiche do spring those sweet perfumes the senses that delight,
And see with how great flate the ruddie lippes they shade,
Wilt think the workman more divine that such a work hath made.

Now see those crimson cheekes, the mounts wherein do dwell
The golden fruit Æneas fet from midst the mouth of hell,
Bebed with druen snow, and pouned with Rubie red;
To which compare the ruddie rofe, and it wil seeme but dead.

Next praise those cherrie lips where rofe and lilie meete,
Enclosures of th' Egyptian gems, frö whence doth Zephir sweet
Breath forth a blazé, and yeeld a noyse like to Orpheus lute,
Which mou'd the craggie rocks to ruth, & flird what so was mute.

Yet in that dimpled chinnè bebed with every grace,
Where curious eye may easlie see the beautie of the face.
Admit but this, that Ganinede the cuppe for Ioue did shufe:
And if a man might drink with Gods, would I the same might use.

Then blessed be those mounts where Venus sits and sings,
With wanton Cupid in her lappe, and from those statelie springs
Draws Nectar forth to feed her sonne: which ta(ß) him so boguirdl,
That onlie for to sucke those teates, he still would be a child.

But looke a low (my Muse) and fixe thy statelie view:
Behold a path like Dedalls mase, wherein with assure clew
A Theseus may the secret cells of beautie there behold,
More statelie than th' Egyptian tombes, though reared all of gold.

Next
Poems.

Next which of Alabaster white a mountaine there doth rise,
A mountaine faire of driven snowe, wherein incarued lies
A statelie type of Venus vale: some calls it Cupids couch;
Whereas the God devising lies which part were best to touch.

There spies he earths Elixium, where Nature fits and paints
Th' impressions of the sweetest formes her fancie her acquaints:
In which one lulla I would rokke to Beauties grace,
And be a prentise during life to serve her in that place.

Next lulla to those forts whereout doth fancie price,
As one amaz'd to see the starre is fixt before her eye.
A Crinite Comet crispèd faire which on those arches stands
Of Marble white enameled, and close'd with asure bands.

But he that sees those knees, whose feature is so faire.
As when they bend, all knees do bend below and midst the aire;
Whose cords by compasse knit, and nerves by Nature set,
Bindes Art apprentice for some yeres the patterne for to get.

Here refis not wonders yet: for why behold a love
Two ris'ng siluer coloured crowdes, which like to those doo shewe,
As compasse in faire Phoebus then, when in his midday prime
He sported with Caffandra faire, amongst the summer time.

Now Nature stands amazèd her selfe to looke on Beauties feete,
To see those ioynts conbinde in one, and fram'd of Amber sweete,
So smal a pile so great a weight, like Atlas to uphold
The bodie, as the mightie man to bore the heavens is bold.

But to behold those Gemini, those siluer coloured armes,
Whos native blood with blush'ning streams in assure conduits warmes,
Incuate the fence like violets, bapurfurated faire
With Floras lillies, lillie white these lonelie branches are.

But whilest I gaze a low, and see those palmes of peace,
Wherein the mappe of fortune rests and times descents incresse:
From whence the branching fingers spred betipt with ivorie,
The least impression whereof a marble mind might mollifie.

Makes me cöffe s pen may not write, hart think, nor tung unfold
The leaft effect in Beautie, where both iuorie, pearle, and gold,
Where purphure, Ebonie, white, and red, al colours stainèd bee:
And if thou secke for all these sweetes, then secke my sweet to see.

Finis.

E 3

Sundrie
Sundrie sweete Sonnets
written by the same
Gent.

1

A Verie Phænix, in her radiant eies
I leaue mine age, and get my life againe;
True Hesperus, I watch her fall and rife:
And with my teares extinguish all my paine,
   My lips for shadowes shield her spiring rofes,
Mine eies for watchmen guard her while shee sleepeoth,
My reaons ferue to quite her faint supposeth:
Her fancie, mine; my faith her fancie keepeth;
She floure, I branch; her sweetes my fowres supporteth,
O happie Loue, where such delights conforteth.

Finis.

2

I Vow but with some griefe henceforth to shunne the place,
   Where beautie casts her scorching lookes to feed me with dis-
And since I was so fond to build on such a molde,
   As every wawe of vaine conceit the substance may unfolde;
   I will repent with teares the errors of my mind,
   And leaue to tie my thoughtes to like of wanton womankind.
Whose wayward wiles I spie how full of slaights they be,
The heart delights in others choise, the hand yet faunes on me,
And faine she would forfake, yet follows if I shunne,
And with her tung repents the time that ere the fact was done.
   And yet she will be thought as constant as the best;
   Yet scornes the ma that beareth faith & courage in his crest.
Whom if she liift to knowe, his colour fable is;
   A mournful colour mette for those whose eyes have gas'd amis:
His colour pale for woe, his courage all forlorne;
   His hart confirm'd to shun the sex that holds his faith in scorne.
   Willing all men to learne, leaft they be forft to proue,
   That women alter with the wind, and have no hold in loue.

Finis.

The
Sonnets.

3
The heauens inclinde to change, are pasing cleere,
Their shoures restraind make billowes of mine eies,
Their windes made calme within my breast appeere,
Which dims the aire with sighs and heauie cries.
My frozen loute hath laid the frost adowne,
These snowes restraind seue to congeale my heart,
This pleafant spryng my stormie sorowes frowne:
Goe lying bookes, cease fooles to boaste your art,
And marke the caufe: my Miftres smiles and lowres
Makes cleere the heauens, & clowdes my heart with

Finis.

4
I Will become a Hermit now,
and doo my penance straignt
For all the errors of mine eyes
with foolish rashnes fild:
My hermitage shall placed be,
where mellancholies waight,
And none but loute alone shall knowe
the bower I meane to build.
My daylie diet shall be care,
made calme by no delight:
My dolefull drinke my drierie teares,
amidst the darkefome place
The fire that burnes my heedles heart
shall stand in stead of light,
And shall consume my wearie life
mine errors to deface.
My gowne shall be of spreding gray
to clad my limmes withall:
My late repent upon my broue
shall plainlie written be.
My tedious grieue and great remorse
that doth my soule enthrall,
Shall serue to plead my wearie paines

and
Sonnets.

...and peniue miserie.
Of faintfull hope shall be my staffe,
and daylie when I pray,
My mistris picture plac't by lorne
shall witnes what I say.

Finis.

5
If that I seeke the shade, I sodeinlie doo see
The God of Loue forfake his bow, and sit me by:
If that I thinke to write, his Mufes pliant be:
If that I plaime my grieve, the wanton boy will crie.
If I lament my cares, he dooth increafe my paine:
If teares my cheeks attaint, his cheeks be moyft with mone:
If I diclofe the wounds the which my heart hath flaine,
He takes his Fascia off, and wipes them drie anone.
If that I walke the woods, the woods are his delight:
If I my felte torment, he bathes him in my blood:
He will my Souldier be if once I wend to fight:
If seas delight, he steeres my barke amid the floud:
In brieue, the cruell God dooth neuer from me goe,
But makes my laeting loue eternall by my voe.

Finis.

6

V\VEarie am I to wearie Gods and men,
Wearie am I to weep so manie teares
without some succor:
Wearie am I my wretched flate to ken,
Wearie am I to see my wofull yeares
confume with dolor.
These mounts, these fields, these rocks, these wanes, these woods
Resigne their ecchoes to my wofull cries,
too much disdained:
These lambes, these kidds, these bullockes, leaue their foods,
These flowers, this grass, with mourning parched lies
to see me pained.
Naught under Sunne that hath not tasted change,

My
Sonnets.

My bitter griefe alone abideth still
    without departure.
Accurst be Loue, that wrought this wonder strange,
Boading my sorowes by my wanthon will
    that cause my smarting.
O quiet life forepast, why hast thou left
The woffull shepheard wearie of his paine
    to feed on sorrow?
Oh weeping eies of wonted ioyes bereft,
Why leave you him whom lucklesse Loue hath slaine
    to view the morrow?
My faintfull flocke dooth languish and lament,
To see their master mourning his miscrope
    this iolly season:
My bagpipe's broke, my roundelayes are blent,
My rebecke now my solace to advance
    accounts it season:
Yet not alone sheepe, lambes, kiddes weep my woe:
But rockes for ruth, and birds for sorow plaine
    my woffull wending:
Then cruell Loue vouchsafe me to forgoe
My wretched life, the cause of mickle paine,
    and make mine ending.
The rockes their brookes with murmuring noyse shall wepe,
The birds their fongs with warbling notes shall sing:
    and full of pleafure
My flockes shall feed, although their master sleep,
And to my graue their falling fleeces bring,
    their native treasure.
Solace each where shall raigne when I am dead,
No care, no woe, no sorow shall prevaile:
    but well contented
Poore I shall sleep, when cursed Loue is fled,
That first with furie did the fields affaile
    where I frequented.
Finis.

F

The
Sonnets.

7
The earth late choakt with showers
Is now arrayd in greene:
Her bosome springs with flowers,
The aire dissolves her teene,
   The heauens laugh at her glorie:
Yet bide I sad and forie.
The woods are deckt with leaues,
And trees are cloathed gaye,
And Flora crownd with sheues
With oaken boughs dooth play:
   Where I am clad in blacke,
   The token of my wracke.
The birds vpon the trees
Doo sing with pLESant voices,
And chaunt in their degrees
Their loves and luckie choices:
   When I, whilst they are singing,
   With sighs mine armes am wringing.
The Thrushes seeke the shade,
And I my fatall graue:
Their flight to heauen is made,
My walke on earth I haue:
   They free, I thrall: they iolly,
   I sad and penitue wholly.

8

\textbf{\textit{Vv}}

\textit{When with advice I weigh my yeares forepast,}
\textit{And count the course that in my youth I kept:}
\textit{How my fond eies on garish beautie plaist,}
\textit{Dimde by desires in vaine opinion slept:}
\textit{For euerie looke and thought with teares I crie,}
\textit{I loath the faults and follies of mine eie.}
\textit{By which my heart was burnt with scorching flame,}
\textit{Growing to head by stealth of idle time,}
\textit{Whom oft my lookes with blushing red did blame;}
\textit{But follie fixt before, it grew to prime:}
\textit{So for my wanton lookes with teares I crie,}
\textit{I loath the faults and follies of mine eie.}
\textit{Oh wanton looks, yee foes of sad forecast,}
\textit{That wept the teares of will, and not repent:}
\textit{Now see the end how fickle faire is past, And}
Sonnets.

And crimson cheekes with crooked yeares are spent:
And blame your felues, and helpe my carefull crie,
Who loath the faults and follies of mine eye.

Finis.

And, heart, and eye; toucht, thought, and did behold
A lock, a ioye, a looke of great delight,
Lookes sweet, ioyes rare, but lockes of beaten gold,
Hearts ioye, eyes lookes, hands touch so pleasde my sight;
That what I would, by eye, hand, heart I trie,
And what I am, is but hand, heart, and eye.

Finis.

If hollowe eyes, if wan and wearie face,
If scalding sighes my secret suites bewray:
Lye (love) those lookes that want their former grace,
And dying thoughts which secret ioyes betray.

And grant me this that either death may ease,
Or humble suite my mistris wrath appease.
Whose dire disdaine more pines my fainting heart,
Than æthernaes flame that fumes both night and day:
Whose wisedome when it measures by desart,
Dissolues my doubts and drives my woes away:
Whose lookes if once they yeeld me beames of grace,
Discharge the furrowes that befret my face.

Twixt hope and happe my shippe doth beare a faile,
The Seas are sighes, the Ancker slipper ioye;
Would Sea and Ancker both, and tace might faile,
So land of loue were gain'd to foile annoye.

I say no more, the teare that laft did fall
On latter line, can shewe and open all.

Finis.

A Satyre sitting by a riuier side,
Foreworne with care that hardlie findes recure:
A straying Nymph in passion did deride
His teares, his care, her smiles her scornes assure:
He wept, she wisht, and all their thoughts among,
Fancie beheld and fung this carefull song.

F 2

Perhaps
Sonnets.

Perhaps the furrowes in thy wrinckled face
Growne by thy griefe, abate thy wonted forme:
Perhaps her eye was formde to yeeld disgrace,
And blemisht that which wit may not reforme.
    Perhaps she will if so thou lift to proue,
    Perhaps she likes, and yet she dares not loue.
But if (perhaps) thy fortune be so faire,
Laugh Satyre then it proues a pretie prize:
And if thou wilt, so liue to shunne dispaire
As looking long thou keepe thy proper eyes.
    This saide she ceas'd: the Nymph she fled away,
    And good perfwasion caus'd the Satyre play.

12

Aire Phoebus fowre upon a sommer morne,
Gan proude with love to fowe her painted pride,
And gay with glorie with a curious scorne,
Disdainde those buds that blossom'd her beside.
    When Rose and Lillies, Violets and Balme,
    (Scarce warm'd to worke their beauties to a fowre)
With envious wrath neere to a water calme,
Beheld my Phillis in a happie howre.
    Not wak't nor wonne too much with solemnse sleepe,
But sweetlie fombring they beheld my Saint,
The Rose and Lillies both together creepe;
The one her lip, the next her cheeke did taint,
    And both they spread: the Violet consum'd
To gentle ayre her amber breath fulfilled:
Apollo feeling all the aire perfumnde,
With gentle beames into her eyes distilled.
    His fowre amaz'd, gawe Rose and Lillies place,
The Sunne his shine within her eyes containeth,
The Rose her lips, the Lillies decke her face,
The Violet within her breath remaineth.

Lenuoy.

Then cease (siond men) henceforth to boast your flowers,
Since Roses, Lillies, Violets are ours:
    And Phoebus fowre doth homage to their powers,
And Phillis eye his glorious beames devours.
FINIS.
HUNTERIAN CLUB

Nо. XLIII. — Fifth Year (1875-76)

ROSALYNDE

Euphues Golden Legacie

BY

THOMAS LODGE

REPRINTED FROM THE FIRST EDITION

1898

PRINTED FOR THE HUNTERIAN CLUB

1878
NOTE.

As the only known copy of the First Edition of "Rosalynde. Euphues Golden Legacie," 1590, is imperfect, the text of Sig. R (pp. 129-136), distinguished by being enclosed within square brackets, is reprinted from the Second Edition of 1592.
Rofalynde.

Euphues golden legacie: found after his death
in his Cell at Sillexedra.

Bequeathed to Philautus Jonnes
nourshed vp with their father in England.

Fetcht from the Canaries.
By T. L. Gent.

LONDON,
Imprinted by Thomas Orwin for T.G.
and John Busbie.

1590.
1879, Dec. 5.
Subscription form.
TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE and his most esteemed
Lord the Lord of Hunsdon, Lord
Chamberlaine of her Maiesties
household, and Gouernour of her
towne of Barwicke:
T.L.G. wiseth increase
of all honourable virtues.

Vch Romanes (right Honourable) as delighted in martiaall exploytes, attempted their actions in the honour of Augustus, because he was a Patron of souldiers: and Virgil dignified him with his poems, as a Moecenas of schollers; both ioyntly aduauncing his royaltie, as a Prince warlike and learned. Such as sacrifice to Pallas, present her with bayes as she is wise, and with armour as she is valiant; observing herein that excellent which dedicateth honours according to the perfection of the person. VVhen J
A 2
entred
The Epistle

entred (right honourable) with a deep insight into the consideration of these premisses, seeing your L. to be a Patron of all martiall men, and a Moecenas of such as applie themselves to study; wearing with Pallas both the launce and the bay, and ayming with Augustus at the favour of all, by the honourable vertues of your minde: being my selfe first a Student, and after falling from bookes to armes, even vowed in all my thoughts dutifully to affect your L. Hauing with Capt: Clarke made a voyage to the J-lands of Terceras & the Canaries, to beguile the time with labour, J writ this booke; rough, as hatcht in the stormes of the Ocean, and feathered in the surges of many perilous seas. But as it is the worke of a solldier and a scholler, J presumed to shrowde it under your Honors patronage, as one that is the fautor and fauourer of all vertuous actions; and whose honourable Loues grown from the generall applause of the whole Common wealth for your higher deserts, may keep it frō the mallice of every bitter tung. Other reasons more particular (right Honorable) chalegne in me a speciall affection to your L. as being a scholler with your two noble sonnes
Dedicatorie.

Master Edmond Carew & M. Robert Carew, (two fiends worthie of so honorable a tree, and a tree glorious in such honourable fruit) as also being Scholler in the Vniuersitie vnder that learned and vertuous Knight Sir Edward Hobbie, when he was Batcheler in Arts, a mà as well lettered as well borne, and after the E-tymologie of his name soaring as high as the wings of knowledge can mount him, happie euerie way, & the more fortunate, as blessed in the honor of so vertuous a Ladie. Thus (right honourable) the dutie that I owe to the sonnes, chargeth me that all my affection be placed on the father; for where the braunches are so precious, the tree of force must be most excellent. Commanded and emboldened thus with the confideration of these forepast reasons, to present my Booke to your Lordship; I humbly intreate, your Honour will vouch of my labours, and faavour a fouldiers and a schollers pen with your gracious acceptance; who answeres in affection what he wants in eloquence; so devoted to your Honour, as his onely desire is, to end his life vnder the faavour of so martiaall and learned a Patron.
The Epistle

Resting thus in hope of your Lordships courtezie, in deyning the Patronage of my worke, I cease: wishing you as many honourable fortunes as your Lordship can desire, or I imagine.

Your Honours soouldier
humbly affectionate:

Thomas Lodge.

To
To the Gentlemen Readers.

Gentlemen, look not here to find anie sprigs of Pallas bay tree, nor to heare the humour of any amorous Lawreate, nor the pleasing vaine of anie eloquent Orator: *Nolo altum sapere*, they be matters aboue my capacitie; the Coblers checke shall neuer light on my head, *Ne sutor ultra crepidam*, I will goe no further than the latchet, and then all is well. Heere you may perhaps find som leaues of Venus mirtle, but heaven down by a fouldier with his curtleeaxe, not bought with the allurement of a filed tongue. To be breife Gentlemen, roome for a fouldier, & a failer, that giues you the fruits of his labors that he wrought in the Ocean, when euerie line was wet with a surge, & euerie humorous passion countercheckt with a storme. If you like it, so:

and
To the Gentlemen Readers.
and yet I will be yours in duetie, if you bee mine in fauour. But if *Momus* or anie squint-eied asse that hath mightie eares to conceiue with *Midas*, and yet little reaoun to judge; if hee come aboord our Barke to find fault with the tackling, when he knows not the shrowdes, Ile downe into the hold, and fetch out a rustie pollax, that sawe no funne this feauen yeare, and either well be baft him, or heaue the cockescombe ouer boord to feede cods. But courteous Gentlemen that fauour most, backbite none, & pardon what is ouerslipt, let such come & welcome, Ile into the Stevwards roome, & fetch them a kan of our beft beuradge. VVell Gentlemen, you haue *Euphues Lega-cie*. I focht it as farre as the Ilands of *Terceras*, and therefore read it; censure vvith fauour, and farevvell.

Yours T.L.
Rofalynd.

Here dwelled adioynge to the citie of Bourdeaux a knight of most honorable parentage, whom Fortune had graced with manie favours, and Nature honored with fundrie exquisite qualities, so beautified with the excellence of both, as it was a question whether Fortune or Nature were more prodigall in deciphering the riches of their bounties. Wife hée was, as holding in his head a supreme conceipt of policie, reaching with Nestor into the depth of all ciuill governmment; and to make his wisedome more gracious, he had that salem ingenii and plesant eloquence that was so highlie commended in vLisses: his valour was no lesse than his wit, nor the stroake of his Launce no lesse forcible, than the sweetnesse of his tongue was perfwasiue: for he was for his courage chosen the principall of all the Knights of Malta. This hardie Knight thus enricht with Vertue and Honour, surnamed Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux, hauing passt the prime of his youth in fundrie battailes against the Turkes, at last (as the date of time hath his course) grew aged: his haires were silver hued, and the map of age was figured on his forehead: Honour fat in the furrowes of his face, and many yeres were pourtraied in his wrinckled liniaments, that all men might perceiue his glasse was runne, and that

Nature
Euphues

Nature of necessity chalenged her due. Sir Iohn (that with the Phenix knewe the tearme of his life was now expyreth, and could with the Swanne discouer his end by her songs) hauing three sones by his wife Lynida, the verie pride of all his forepast and yeres, thought now (seeing death by constrait would compell him to leaue them) to bestowe vpon them such a Legacie as might bewray his loue, and increa\,e their ensuing amity. Calling therefore these yong Gentle\,men before him in the presence of all his fellowe Knights of Malta, he resolued to leaue them a memoriall of his fatherlie care, in setting downe a methode of their brotherlie dueties. Hauing therefore death in his lookes to moove them to pitie, and teares in his eyes to paint out the depth of his passions, taking his eldest sone by the hand, hee began thus.

Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux Legacie he gaue to his Sonnes.

Oh my Sonnes, you see that Fate hath set a period of my yeres, and De\,stinies haue determined the finall ende of my daies: the Palme tree waxeth away ward, for he stoopeth in his height, and my plumes are full of sick feathers touched with age. I mu\,st to my graue that dischargeth all cares, and leaue you to the world that encreareth many sorowes: my siluer haires containeth great experience, and in the number of my yeres are pend downe the subtleties of Fortune. Therefore as I leaue you so\,me fading pelle to counterchecke pouertie, so I will be\,queath you infallible precepts that shall leade you vnto ver\,tue. First therefore vnto thee Saladyne the eld\,est, and therefore the chie\,fest piller of my house, wherein shou\,ld be ingra\,uen as well the excellence of thy fathers qualities, as the eff\,sentiall forme of his proportion, to thee I giue fouret\,eene plough\,lands, with all my Mannor hou\,ses and richest plate. Next vnto Fernandyne I bequeath twelue plough\,lands.

But
golden Legacie.

But unto ROSADER the yongest I giue my Horfe, My Armour and my Laurence, with sixteeene ploughlands: for if the inward thoughts be discovered by outward shadowes, ROSADER will exceed you all in bountie and honour. Thus (my Sonnes) haue I parted in your portions the substance of my wealth, wherein if you bee as prodigall to spend, as I haue been careful to get, your friends will grieue to see you more waftfull than I was bountifull, and your foes smile that my fall did begin in your excessie. Let mine honour be the glasse of your actions, and the fame of my vertues the Loadstarre to direct the course of your pilgrimage. Ayme your deedes by my honorable endeouours, and shewe your felues siens worthie of so florishing a tree: leaft as the birds HALCYONES which exceede in whiteneffe, I hatch yong ones that surpass in blackneffe. Clime not my fonnes; aspiring pride is a vapour that ascended hie, but soone turneth to a smoake: they which stare at the Starres, stumble upon stones; and such as gaze at the Sunne (unlesse they bee Eagle eyed) fall blinde. Soare not with the Hobbie, leaft you fall with the Larke; nor attempt not with PHAETON, leaft you drowne with ICArus. Fortune when she wils you to flie, tempers your plumes with waxe, and therefore either fit still and make no wing, or els beware the Sunne, and holde DEDALUS axiome authenticall (medium tenere tussissimum). Low shrubbes have deepe rootes, and poore Cottages great patience. Fortune lookes ever vpward, and enuie aspireth to nestle with dignietie. Take heede my fonnes, the meane is sweetest melodie; where strings high stretcht, either soone cracke, or quicklie growe out of tune. Let your Countries care be your hearts content, and thinke that you are not borne for your felues, but to leuell your thoughts to be loyall to your Prince, careful for the Common weale, and faithfull to your friends; so shall France say, these men are as excellent in vertues, as they be exquisite in features. Oh my fonnes, a friend is a precious Iewell, within whose bosome you may vnload your forowes and vnfolde your secrets,
Euphues

secretes, and hee either will releue with counsaile, or perseverade with reason: but take heed in the choyce, the outward shew makes not the inward man, nor are the dimples in the face the Calenders of trueth. When the Liquorice leafe looketh most drie, then it is moost wet. When the shoares of Leptanthes are moost quiet, then they forepoint a storme. The Baaran leafe the more faire it lookes, the more infectious it is, and in the sweetest words is oft hid the most treacherie. Therefore my sones, choose a friend as the Hiperborei do the mettals, seuer them from the ore with fire, & let them not bide the stamp before they be currant; so trie and then trust, let time be touchstone of friendship, & then friends faithfull lay them vp for Jewells. Be valiant my sones, for cowardise is the enemie to honour; but not too rash, for that is an extreme. Fortitude is the meane, and that is limited within bonds, and prescrib'd with circumstance. But aboue all, and with that he fetcht a deepe sigh, beware of Loue, for it is farre more perilous than pleasant, and yet I tell you it allureth as ill as the Syrens. Oh my sones, fancie is a fickle thing, and beauties paintings are trickt vp with times colours, which being set to drie in the Sunne, perish with the fame. Venus is a wanton, & though her lawes pretend libertie, yet there is nothing but losse and glittering miferie. Cupids wings are plum'd with the feathers of vanitie, and his arrowes where they pearce, inforce nothing but deadly desires: a woman's eye as it is precious to behold, so it is prejudiciall to gaze vpon; for as it affoordeth delight, so it snareth vnto death. Trust not their fawning favours, for their loues are like the breath of a man vpon steele, which no sooner lighteth on but it leapeth of, and their passions are as momentarie as the colours of a Po-lipe, which changeath at the sight of euerie obiect. My breath waxeth short and mine eyes dimme, the houre is come and I must away: therefore let this suffice, women are wantons, and yet men cannot want one: and therefore if you loue, choose her that hath her eyes of Adamant, that will turne
golden Legacie.

turne only to one poynnt; her heart of a Diamond, that will receive but one forme; her tongue of a Sethin leafe, that neuer waggis but with a Southeaste winde: and yet my sonnes, if she haue all these qualities, to be chaft, obedient, and silent; yet for that she is a woman, shalt thou finde in her sufficient vanities to counteruale her vertues. Oh now my sonnes, euen now take these my last words as my latest Legacie, for my thrid is sponne, and my foote is in the graue: keepe my precepts as memorialls of your fathers counsaillers, and let them bee lodged in the secrete of your hearts; for wisedome is better than wealth, and a golden sentence worth a world of treasure. In my fall fee & marke my sonnes the follie of man, that being duft climbeth with BIARES to reach at the Heauens, and readie euerie minute to dye, yet hopeth for an age of pleasures. Oh mans life is like lightning that is but a flash, and the longest date of his yeares but as a bauens blaze. Seeing then man is so mortall, bee carefull that thy life bee vertuous, that thy death may be full of admirable honours; so shalt thou challenge fame to bee thy fautor, and put obliuion to exile with thine honorable actions. But my Sonnes, leaft you should forget your fathers axiomes, take this scroule, wherein reade what your father dying, wils you to execute liuing. At this hee shrunke downe in his bed and gaue vp the ghost.

IOHN of Bourdeaux being thus dead, was greatlie lamented of his Sonnes and bewayed of his friends, especiallie of his fellowe Knights of Malta, who attended on his Funeralls, which were performed with great solemnitie. His Obsequies done, SALADYNE causd next his Epitaph the contents of the scroule to be pourtraied out, which were to this effect.
Euphues

The contents of the schedule which Sir John of Bourdeaux gaue to his Sonnes.

My Sonnes, behold what portion I do giue;  
I leue you goods, but they are quicklie lost;  
If leue aduice, to schoole you how to liue;  
I leue you wit, but wonne with little cost:  
But keepe it well; for counfaile still is one,  
When Father, friends, and worldlie goods are gone.

In choice of thrift let honour be thy gaine,  
Winne it by vertue and by manly might;  
In dooing good esteeme thy toyle no paine,  
Protei the fatherlesse and widowes right:  
Fight for thy faith, thy Countrie and thy King,  
For why? this thrift will prooue a blessed thing.

In choice of wife, preferre the modest chaste,  
Lillies are faire in shew, but foule in smell;  
The sweetesst lookes by age are soone defas:  
Then chooze thy wife by wit and liuing well.  
Who brings thee wealth and many faults withall,  
Presents thee honie, mixt with bitter gall.

In choice of friends, beware of light believe,  
A painted tongue may shroud a subtill heart;  
The Syrens teares doo threaten mickle grieue,  
Forefeee my sonne, for feare of sodaine smart:  
Chuse in thy wants: and he that friends thee then,  
When richer growne, befriend him thou agen.

Learne of the Ant in sommer to prooue;  
Drive with the Bee the Droane from out thy hewe;  
Builde like the Swallowe in the sommer tide;  
Spare not too much (my sonne) but sparing thrive:  

Be

14
golden Legacie.

Be poore in folle, rich in all but sinne:
So by thy death thy glorie shall beginne.

Saladine hauing thus set vp the Schedule, and hangd about his Fathers hearde many passionete Poems, that France might suppose him to be passing sorrowfull, he clad himselle and his Brothers all in black, & in such sable futes discoursed his grieue: but as the Hiena when she mornes is then most guilefull, so Saladine vnder this shew of grieue shadowed a heart full of contented thoughtes: the Tyger though hee hide his clawes, will at laft discouer his rapine: the Lions lookes are not the mappes of his meaning, nor a mans phifnomie is not the display of his secrets. Fire cannot bee hid in the straw, nor the nature of man so concealed, but at laft it will haue his course: noorture and art may doo much, but that Natura naturans which by propagation is ingrafted in the heart, will be at laft perforce predominant according to the olde verfe.

Naturam expellas furca licet, tamen usque recurret.
So fared it with Saladyn, for after a months mourning was past, he fell to consideration of his Fathers testament, how he had bequeathed more to his younger brothers than himselle, that Rosader was his Fathers darling, but now vnder his tuition, that as yet they were not come to yeres, & he being their gardin, might (if not defrauded them of their due) yet make such hauock of their legacies and lands, as they should be a great deale the lighter: whereupon hee began thus to meditate with himselle.

Saladynes meditation with himselle.

Saladyne, how art thou disquieted in thy thoughts, & perplexed with a world of restlesse passions, hauing thy minde troubled with the tenour of thy Fathers testament,
Euphues

flament, and thy heart fiered with the hope of present pre-
fermentis by the one, thou art counsaild to content thee with
thy fortunes; by the other, perfwaded to aspire to higher
wealth. Riches (SALADYNE) is a great royalty, & there is no
swetter phisick than store. AUNCEN like a foole forgot in hisA-
phoristicnes to say, that golde was the most precious restora-
tique, and that treasure was the most excellent medecine of
the minde. Oh SALADYNE, what were thy Fathers precepts
breathed into the winde? haft thou so soone forgottē his prin-
ciples? did he not warne thee from coueting without honor,
and climing without vertue? did hee not forbid thee to
aime at any action that should not be honourable? and what
will bee more prejudiciall to thy credit, than the carelesse
ruine of thy brothers welfare? why shouldest not thou bee
the piller of thy brothers prosperitie; and wilt thou become
the subuerion of their fortunes? is there any swetter thing
than concord, or a more precious iewel then amity? are you
not sons of one Father, siens of one tree, birds of one neft?
and wilt thou become so vnnatural as to rob them, whome
thou shouldest relieue? No SALADYNE, intreate them with
fauours, and intertaine them with loye; so shalt thou haue
thy conscience cleare and thy renowne excellent. Tuff, what
words are these base foole; farre vnfit (if thou be wise) for thy
humour. What though thy Father at his death talked of
many friuolous matters, as one that doated for age, and ra-
ued in his sicknesse: shal his words be axioms, and his talke
be so authentical, that thou wilt (to obserue them) prejudicce
thy selfe? No no SALADYNE, fick mens wills that are pa-
role, and haue neither hand nor seale, are like the lawes of a
Citie written in dust; which are broken with the blast of e-
uerie winde. What man thy Father is dead, and hee can
neither helpe thy fortunes, nor measure thy actions: there-
fore burie his words with his carkasse, and bee wise for thy
selfe. What, tis not so olde as true:

Non sapit, qui sibi non sapit.

Thy Brother is young, keepe him now in awe, make him not
golden Legacie.

not check mate with thy selfe: for

_Nimia familiaris as contemptum parit._

Let him knowe little, so shall he not be able to execute much; suppress his wittes with a base estate, and though he be a Gentleman by nature yet forme him a new, and make him a peasant by nourture: so shalt thou keepe him as a slave, and raign thy selfe sole Lord over all thy Fathers possessions. As for FERNANDYNE thy middle brother he is a schooler, and hath no minde but on ARISTOTLE, let him reade on GALEN while thou rifieft with gold, and pore on his booke till thou dooest purchase lands: wit is great wealth, if hee haue learning it is enough; and so let all rest.

In this humour was SALADYNE making his brother ROSADER his foote boy, for the space of two or three yeares, keeping him in such seruile subjection, as if hee had been the sonne of any countie vassall. The yong Gentleman bare al with patience, til on a day walking in the garde by himself, he began to consider how he was the son of JOHN of Bourdeaux, a knight renowned for many victories, & a Gentleman famed for his vertues, how contrarie to the testament of his father, he was not only kept from his land, and intreated as a servant, but smothered in such secret slaverie, as he might not attaine to any honourable actions. Ah quoth he to himselfe (nature working these effectuall passions) why should I that am a Gentleman borne, passe my time in such unnaturall drudgerie? were it not better either in Paris to become a scholler, or in the court a courtier, or in the field a fouldier, than to liue a foote boy to my own brother: nature hath lent me wit to coeieue, but my brother denied me arte to contemplate: I haue strength to performe any honorable expoyte, but no libertie to accomplishe my vertuous indevours: those good partes that God hath bestowd vpon me, the enuie of my brother dooth smother in obscuriti: the harder is my fortune, and the more his frowardnesse. With that castinge vp his hand he felt haire on his face, and perceiving his beard to bud, for choler hee began to blush, and

C swore
Euphues

fwer to himselfe he would bee no more subject to such flatterie. As thus he was ruminating of his melancholie passions, in came SALADYNE with his men, and seeing his brother in a browne studie, and to forget his wonted reuerence, thought to shake him out of his dumps thus. Sirha (quoth hee) what is your heart on your halfe penie, or are you saying a Dirge for your fathers soule? what is my dinner readie? At this question ROSADER turning his head afsance, & bending his browes as if anger there had ploughed the furrowes of her wrath, with his eyes full of fire, he made this replie. Doest thou aske me (SALADYNE) for thy Cates? aske some of thy Churles who are fit for such an office: I am thine equall by nature, though not by birth; and though thou haft more Cardes in the bunch, I haue as many trumps in my hands as thy selfe. Let me question with thee, why thou haft feld my Woods, spoyled my Manner house, and made haucck of such vtenfals as my father bequeathed vnto me? I tell thee SALADYNE, either answer me as a brother, or I will trouble thee as an enemie.

At this replie of ROSADERS, SALADYNE smiled as laughing at his presumtion, & frowned as checking his follie: hee therefore tooke him vp thus shortlie. What sirha, well I see earlie prickes the tree that will proue a thorne: hath my familiar converfing with you made you coy, or my good lookes drawne you to be thus contemptuous? I can quickly remedy such a fault, and I will bende the tree while it is a wand: In faith (sir boy) I haue a snaffle for such a headströg colt. You firs lay hold on him and binde him, and then I will giue him a cooling cardre for his choller. This made ROSADER halfe mad, that stepping to a great rake that stood in the garden, he laide such loade vpon his brothers men that he hurt some of them, and made the rest of them run away. SALADYNE seeing ROSADER so resolute, and with his resolution so valiant, thought his hécles his best safetie, and tooke him to a loast adioyning to the garden, whether ROSADER pursued him hotlie. SALADYNE afraide of his brothers furie, cried
cried out to him thus. ROSADER bee not so rash, I am thy brother and thine elder, and if I have done thee wrong I'll make thee amends: revenge not anger in blood, for so shalt thou stain the virtue of old Sir JOHN of Bourdeaux: say wherein thou art discontent and thou shalt be satisfied. Brothers frown not to be periods of wrath: what man look not so sowerlie, I knowe we shall be friends, and better friends than we have been. For, Amantium irae amoris redint egratio eft.

These wordes appeased the choller of ROSADER, (for hee was of a milde and courteous nature) so that he laide downe his weapons, and vpon the faith of a Gentleman assured his brother he would offer him no prejudice: wherevpon SALADYNE came downe, and after a little parley they imbraced each other and became frends, and SALADYNE promising ROSADER the restitution of all his lands, and what fauour els (quoth he) any waies my abilitie or the nature of a brother may performe. Vpon these sugred reconciliations they went into the house arme in arme together, to the great content of all the old seruants of Sir JOHN of Bourdeaux. Thus continued the pad hidden in the frawe, till it chaunced that TORISMOND King of France had appoynted for his pleasure a day of Wraftling and of Tournament to buffet his Commons heads, leaft being idle their thoughts should runne vpon more serios matters, and call to remembrance their old banished King; a Champion there was to stand against all commers a NORMAN, a man of tall stature and of great strength; so valiant, that in many such conflicts he alwaies bare away the victorie, not onely overthrowing them which he encountred, but often with the weight of his bodie killing them outright. SALADYNE hearing of this, thinking now not to let the ball fall to the ground, but to take opportunitie by the forehead: first by secret meanes conuenued with the NORMAN, and procured him with rich rewards to sweare, that if ROSADER came within his clawes he should neuer more returne to quarrell with SALADYNE for his possessions.
Euphues

sessions. The NORMAN desirous of pelfe, as (Quis nisi mentis inops oblatum respuit aurum.) taking great gifts for little Gods, tooke the crownes of SALADYNE to performe the stratagem. Hauing thus the Champion tied to his vilanous determination by oath, he prosecuted the intent of his purpose thus. Hee went to young ROSADER, (who in all his thoughts reacht at honour, and gazed no lower than vertue commaundd him) and began to tell him of this Tournament and Wraftling, how the King should be there, and all the chiefe Peeres of France, with all the beautifull damosels of the Countrey: now brother (quoth he) for the honor of Sir JOHN of Bourdeaux our renowned father, to famous that house that neuer hath been found without men approoved in Cheualrie, shewe thy resolvution to be peremptorie. For my selfe thou knowest though I am eldete by birth, yet neuer hauing attempted any deedes of Armes, I am yongest to performe any Martiall explytes, knowing better how to suruey my lands, than to charge my Launce: my brother FERNANDYNE he is at Paris poring on a fewe papers, hauing more insight into Sophistrie and principles of Philosophie, than any warlike indeuours: but thou ROSADER the yongest in yeares, but the eldest in valour, art a man of strength and darest doo what honour allowes thee; take thou my fathers Launce, his Sword, and his Horfe, and hie thee to the Tournament, and either there valiantlie crack a speare, or trie with the NORMAN for the palme of acziuittie. The words of SALADYNE were but spurres to a free horfe; for hee had scarce vttered them, ere ROSADER tooke him in his armes, taking his proffer so kindly, that he promised in what he might to requite his courtesie. The next morowe was the day of the Tournament, and ROSADER was so defirous to shew his heroycall thoughts, that he past the night with little sleepe: but asfoone as PHOEUS had vailed the Curtein of the night, and made AURORA blufh with giuing her the besojes labres in her siluer Couch, he gat him vp; and taking his leave of his brother, mounted himselfe
himselfe towards the place appoynted, thinking euery mile

of the iourney: to TORISMOND the King of France, who

hauing by force banished GERISMOND their lawfull King

that liued as an outlaw in the Forrest of Arden, fought now

by all meanes to keepe the French busied with all sportes

that might breed their content. Amongst the rest he had

appointed this solemne Tournament, whereunto he in moost

folemne manner resorted, accompanied with the twelue

Peeres of France, who rather for feare than loue graced

him with the shewe of their dutifull fauours: to feede their

eyes, and to make the beholders pleased with the sight of

moost rare and glorious obiects, he had appoynted his owne

daughter ALINDA to be there, & the faire ROSALYN daughter

vnto GERISMOND, with all the beautifull damosels that

were famous for their features in all France. Thus in that

place did Loue and Warre triumph in a sympathie: for such

as were Martiall, might vse their Launce to bee renown-

med for the excellence of their Cheualrie; and such as

were amorous, might glut themselves with gazing on

the beauties of moost heavfnely creatures. As euery mans

eye had his seuerall furuey, and fancie was partiall in

their lookes, yet all in generall applauded the admirable

riches that Nature bestowed on the face of ROSALYN: for

vpon her cheeke there seemed a bataille betwene the

Graces, who should bestow moost fauours to make her ex-

cellent. The blush that gloried LUNA when she kite the shep-

heard on the hills of Latmos was not tainted with such a

pleaunt dye, as the Vermilion flourisht on the siluer hue

of ROSALYNDS countenance; her eyes were like those lampes

that make the wealthie couert of the Heauens more gor-

gerous, sparkling fauour and disdain; courteous and yet

coye, as if in them VENUS had placed all her amoretts, and

DIANA all her chaftitie. The tramells of her hayre, foul-

ded in a call of golde, so farre surpaft the burnisht gifter

of the mettall, as the Sunne dooth the meanest Starre

in
Euphues

in brightnesse: the trefles that foldes in the browes of APOLLO were not halfe so rich to the sight; for in her haires it seemed loue had laide her selfe in ambush, to intrappe the proudeste eye that durst gafe vpon their excellence: what should I neede to decipher her particular beauties, when by the cenfure of all she was the paragon of all earthly perfection. This ROSALYND fat I say with ALINDA as a beholder of these spottes, and made the CAUALIERS crack their lances with more courage: many deeds of Knighthoode that day were performed, and many prizes were giuen according to their seuerall deserts: at last when the tournament ceased, the wraftling began; and the NORMAN presented himselfe as a chalenger against all commers; but he looked like HERCULES when he aduaunft himselfe against ACHEOUS; so that the furie of his countenance amased all that durst attempt to encounter with him in any deede of actuitie: till at last a lustie FRANCKLIN of the Countrie came with two tall men that were his Sonnes of good lyniaments and comely personage: the eldeft of these dooing his obeysance to the King entered the lyft, and presented himselfe to the NORMAN, who straight coapt with him, and as a man that would triumph in the glorie of his strenght, routed himselfe with such furie, that not onely hee gaued him the fall, but killed him with the weight of his corpulent personage: which the younger brother seing, leapt presently into the place, and thirstie after the reuenge, assayled the NORMAN with such valour, that at the first encounter hee brought him to his knee: which repulft so the NORMAN, that recovering himselfe, feare of disgrace doubling his strenght, hee stept so stearnely to the young FRANCKLIN, that taking him vp in his armes he threw him against the ground so violently, that he broake his neck, and so ended his dayes with his brother. At this vnlookt for massacre, the people murmured, and were all in a deepe passion of pittie; but the FRANCKLIN, Father vnto these, neuer changed his countenance; but as a mæ of a courageous resolution, tooke vp the bodies of his Sonnes
golden Legacy.

Sonnes without any shew of outward discontent. All this while stood ROYDER and saw this tragedie: who noting the undoubted vertue of the FRANCKLINS minde, alighted of from his horse, and presentlie sat downe on the graffe, and commaunded his boy to pull off his bootes, making him reade to trie the strength of this Champion; being furnish'd as he would, hee clapt the FRANCKLIN on the shouder and faide thus. Bolde yeoman whose sonnes haue ended the tearme of their yeares with honour, for that I see thou scornest fortune with patience, and whartest the injurie of fate with content, in brooking the death of thy Sonnes: stand a while and either see mee make a third in their tragedie, or else reuenge their fall with an honourable triumph; the FRANCKLIN seeing so goodlie a Gentleman to give him such courteous comfort, gaue him hartie thankes, with promise to pray for his happie success. With that ROYDER vailed bonnet to the King, and lightlie left within the lifts, where noting more the companie than the combatant, hee cast his eye vpon the troupe of Ladies that glistered there like the starrs of heauen, but at last Loue willing to make him as amorous as he was valiant, presented him with the sight of ROSALYNDE, whose admirable beautie so inuaugled the eye of ROYDER, that forgetting himselfe, hee stooode and fed his lookees on the fauour of ROSALYNDES face, which she perceiuing, blusht: which was such a doubling of her beauteous excellence, that the bashfull red of AURORA at the sight of vnaquainted PHAETON was not halfe so glorious: The NORMAN seeing this young Gentleman fettered in the lookees of the Ladies, draue him out of his momento with a shake by the shouder; ROYDER looking back with an angrie frowne, as if he had been wakened from some pleasant dreame, discouered to all by the furie of his countenance that he was a man of some high thoughts: but when they all noted his youth, and the sweetenesse of his visage, with a generall applause of fauours, they grieued that so goodly a young man shou'd venture in so base an action: but seeing
Euphues

Seeing it were to his dishonour to hinder him from his enterprise, they wisht him to be graced with the palme of victorie. After ROSADER was thus called out of his memento by the NORMAN, hee roughly clapt to him with so fierce an incounter, that they both fell to the ground, and with the violence of the fall were forced to breathe: in which space the NORMAN called to minde by all tokens, that this was hee whom SALADYNE had appoynted him to kil; which conieecture made him stretch euerie limb, & trie euerie sinew, that working his death he might recover the golde, which so bountifully was promised him. On the contrarie part, ROSADER while he breathed was not idle, but still cast his eye vpon ROSALYND, who to incouraghe him with a fauour, lent him such an amorous looke, as might haue made the most coward desperate: which glance of ROSALYND so fired the passionate desires of ROSADER, that turning to the NORMAN hee ran vpon him and braued him with a strong encounter; the NORMAN received him as valiantly, that there was a foere combat, hard to judge on whose side fortune would be prodigall. At laft ROSADER calling to minde the beautie of his new Mistresse, the fame of his Fathers honoures, and the disgrace that should fall to his house by his misfortune, roufed himselfe and threw the NORMAN agaist the ground, falling vpon his Chest with so willing a weight, that the NORMAN yeelded nature her due, and ROSADER the victorie. The death of this Champion; as it highlie contented the FRANCKLIN, as a man satisfied with reuenge, so it drue the King and all the Péeeres into a great admiration, that so young yeares and so beautifull a personage, should containe such martiall excellence: but when they knew him to be the yongest Sonne of Sir JOHN of Bourdeaux, the King rose from his seate and embraced him, and the Péeeres intreated him with al fauourable courtesie, commending both his valoure and his vertues, wishing him to goe forward in such haughtyt deeds, that he might attaine to the glorie of his Fathers honourable fortunes. As the King and Lordes graced
golden Legacie.
graced him with embracing, so the Ladies fauored him with their lookes, especially ROSALYND, whome the beautie and valour of ROSADER had alreadie touched; but the accounted loue a toye, and fancie a momentarie passion, that as it was taken in with a gaze, might bee shaken off with a winck; and therefore feared not to dallie in the flame, and to make ROSADER knowe the affection he took from hir neck a Iewell, and sent it by a Page to the young Gentleman. The Prize that VENUS gaue to PARIS was not halfe so pleasing to the TROJAN, as this Iemme was to ROSADER: for if fortune had sworne to make him sole Monark of the world, he would rather haue refused such dignitie, than haue loft the iewell sent him by ROSALYND. To retourne her with the like he was vnfurnished, and yet that hee might more than in his lookes discouer his affection, he stept into a tent, and taking pen and paper writ this fancie.

Two Sunnes at once from one faire heauen there shineth,
Ten branches from two boughes tipt all with roses,
Pure lockes more golden than is golde refineth,
Two pearled rowes that Natures pride incloses:

Two mounts faire marble white, downe-soft and daintie,
A snow died orbe; where love increast by pleasure
Full wofull makes my heart, and bodie faintie:
Hir faire (my woe) exceedes all thought and measure.

In lines confusde my luckye harme appeareth;
Whom sorrow cloudes, whom pleasante smiling cleareth.

This sonnet he sent to ROSALYND, which when she read, she bluift, but with a sweete content in that she perceaued loue had alotted her so amorous a seruant. Leaung her to her new intertayned fancies, againe to ROSADER; who triumphing in the glory of this conquest, accompanied with a troupe of young Gentlemen, that were desirous to be his fami-
Euphues

familiars, went home to his brother Saladyne, who was walking before the gates, to hear what success his brother Rosader should have, assuring him self of his death, and de- 
ing how w't diminished sorrow, to celebrate his funeralls; as he was in this thought, he cast vp his eye, & sawe where Rosader returned with the garland on his head, as ha 
ing won the prize, accompanied with a crew of boone com 
panions; greeued at this, hee stepped in and shut the gate. Rosader seeing this, and not looking for such vnkinde inter 
tainment, blusht at the disgrace, and yet smothering his 
griefe with a smile, he turned to the Gentleman, and defi 
red them to holde his brother excused, for hee did not this vpon any malicious intent or niggrazine, but being brought vp in the countrie, he absented him selfe, as not finding his 
nature fit for such youthfull companie. Thus hee fought to 
shadow abuses proffred him by his brother, but in vayne, for hee could by no means be suffered to enter: whereupon hee 
rised his foote against the doore, and brake it open; drawing 
his sward and entring bouldly into the Hall, where hee 
founde none (for all were fled) but one Adam Spencer an 
Englishe man, who had been an olde and trustie servant to 
Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux: hee for the loue he bare to his decea 
fed Maitre, fauored the part of Rosader, and gaue him 
and his such intertainment as he coulde. Rosader gaue 
him thankes, and looking about, seeing the hall empty, 
saide, Gentleman, you are welcome, frolicke and be merie, 
you shall be sure to haue Wine enough, whatfoever your 
fare be, I tell you Caualiers my brother hath in his house, 
fiue tunne of wine, and as long as that lasteth, I be 
shrewe him that spares his liquor. With that he burft open the but 
terie dore, and with the helpe of Adam Spencer, covered 
the Tables, and set downe whatfoever he could finde in the 
house, but what they wanted in meate, Rosader suppli 
ed with drinke, yet had they royall cheere, and withall such a 
hartie welcome, as would haue made the courseft meates, 
seeme delicats. After they had feastted and frolicked it twice 
or
golden Legacie.

or thrife with an vpsey freeze, they all tooke their leaues of ROSADER and departed. Afoone as they were gone ROSADER growing impatient of the abuse, drewe his sword, and swore to be reuenged on the discurseous SALADYNE: yet by the meanes of ADAM SPENCER, who sought to continue friendship and amitie betwixt the brethren, and through the flattering submission of SALADYNE, they were once agayne reconciled, & put vp all fore passed injuries, with a peaceable agreement, liuing together for a good space in such brotherly loue, as did not onely rejoyce the servants, but made all the Gentlemen and bording neighbours glad of such friendlie concord. SALADYNE hiding fire in the straw, and concealing a poysoned hate in a peaceable countenance, yet deferring the intent of his wrath till fitter opportunitie, he shewed him selfe a great sauor of his brothers vertuous endeuours: where leauing them in this happie league, let vs returne to ROSALYN.

ROSALYN returning home from the triumph, after she waxed solitarie, loue prefented her with the IDEA of ROSADERS perfection, and taking her at discouert, stroke her so deepe, as she felt her selue grow passing passionate: she began to call to minde the comelineffe of his person, the honor of his parents, and the vertues that excelling both, made him so gracious in the eies of euery one. Sucking in thus the hony of loue, by imprinting in her thoughtes his rare qualities, she began to surfet with the contemplation of his vertuous conditions, but when she cald to remembrance her present estate, & the hardnesse of her fortunes, deire began to shrink, & fancy to vall bonnet, that betwene a Chaos of confussed thoughtes, she began to debate with her selue in this manner.

Rosalyns passion.

Infortunate ROSALYN, whose misfortunes are more than thy yeeres, and whose passions are greater than thy patience.
Euphues

ence. The blossomes of thy youth, are mixt with the frostes of enuie, and the hope of thy enuing frutes, perish in the bud. Thy father is by TORISMOND banisht from the crowne, & thou the vnhappie daughter of a King detainted captiue, living as disquieted in thy thoughts, as thy father discontented in his exile. Ah ROSALYNDE what cares wait vpō a crown, what griefes are incident to dignodie? what sorrowes haunt royal Pallaces? The greatest seas haue the forest stormes, the highest birth subiect to the most bale, and of al trees the Cedars soonest shake with the winde: small Currents are euer calme, lowe valleyes not scorcht in any lightnings, nor bafe men tyed to anye balefull prejudice. Fortune flies, & if she touch pouerite, it is with her heele, rather disdaining their want with a frowne, than enuying their wealth with disparagement. Oh ROSALYNDE, hadst thou been borne lowe, thou hadst not fallen so high; and yet being great of bloud, thine honour is more, if thou brookest misfortune with patience. Suppose I contrary fortune with content, yet Fates vnwilling to haue me any way happie, haue forced loue to set my thoughts on fire with fancie. Loue ROSALYNDE becommeth it women in distresse to thynke of loue? Tuff, desire hath no respect of persons, CUPID is blinde and shooteth at rando, as soone hitting a rag, as a robe, and percing soone the bosome of a Captiue, as the breast of a Libertine. Thou speakest it poore ROSALYNDE by experience, for being euerie way distresse, furcharged with cares, and ouergrowne with sorrowes, yet amiddst the heape of all these mishaps, loue hath lodged in thy hart the perfection of young ROSADER, a man every way absolute as well for his inward life, as for his outward lymiaments, able to content the eye with beauty, and the ear with the report of his vertue. But consider ROSALIND his fortunes, and thy present estate, thou art poore and without patrimonie, and yet the daughter of a Prince, he a younger brother, and voide of such possessiones as eyther might maintayne thy dignities, or reuenge thy fathers injuries. And haft thou not learned this of other Ladies
dies, that lourers cannot liuе by lookes; that womens eares
are sooner content with a dram of glue me, than a pound of
heare me; that gould is sweeter than eloquence; that loue is
a fire, & wealth is the fewell; that VENUS Coffers should be
euer full. Then ROSALYND, seeing ROSADER is poore, thinke
him leffe beautifull, because he is in want, and account his
vertues but qualities of course, for that hee is not indue
with wealth. Doth not HORACE tell thee what methode is to
be vsed in loue,

Querenda pecunia primum, post nummos virtus.

Tush ROSALYND, be not ouer rash; leape not before thou
looke; eyther loue such a one as may with his landes pur-
chase thy liberty, or els loue not at all. Choose not a fayre face
with an emptie purfe, but say as moft women vse to say,

Si nihil attuleris, ibis Homere foras.

Why ROSALYND, can such base thoughtes harbour in such
high beauties? Can the degree of a Princes, the daughter of
GERISMOND harbour such servile conceites, as to prize gold
more than honor, or to measure a Gentleman by his wealth,
not by his vertues. No ROSALYND, blush at thy base resolu-
tion, and say if thou louest, either ROSADER or none: and why?
because ROSADER is both beautifull and vertuous. Smi-
ling to her selfe to thinke of her new entertayned passions,
taking vp her Lute that lay by her, she warbled out this
dittie.

Rofalynds Madrigal.

Love in my bosome like a Bee
 doth sucke his sweete:
Now with his wings he playes with me,
 now with his feete.
Within mine eies he makes his feast,
His bed amidst my tender breast,
My kisles are his daily feast;
And yet he robs me of my rest.
 Ah wanton, will ye?

D 3

And
Euphues

And if I sleepe, then pearcheth he
with pretie flight,
And makes his pillow of my knee
the liuelong night.
Strike I my lute he tunes the string,
He musick plays if so I sing,
He lends me euerie louatie thing;
Yet cruel he my heart doth fling.
Whist wanton still ye?

Els I with roses euerie day
will whip you hence;
And binde you when you long to play,
for your offence.
Ilke shut mine eyes to keepe you in,
Ilke make you fast it for your finne,
Ilke count your power not worth a pinne;
Ahlas what hereby shall I winne,
If he gainsay me?

What if I beate the wanton boy
with manie a rod?
He will repay me with annoy,
because a God.
Then fit thou safely on my knee,
And let thy bowre my bosome be:
Lurke in mine eyes I like of thee:
Oh Cupid so thou pitie me.
Spare not but play thee.

Scarce had ROSALYNDE ended her Madrigale, before
TORISMOND came in with his daughter ALINDA, and manie
of the Péeres of France, who were enamoured of her beau-
tie: which TORISMOND perceiving, fearing leaft her perfe-
cution might be the beginning of his preijdice, and the hope
of his fruite ende in the beginning of her blossomes, hee
thought
golden Legacie.

thought to banish her from the Court: for quoth he to him-
selffe, her face is so full of favour, that it pleades pitie in the
eye of euerie man; her beautie is so heauenly and deuine,
that she will proove to me as HELEN did to PRIAM: some one
of the Péeres will ayme at her loue, ende the marriage,
and then in his wiues right attempt the kingdome. To
preuent therefore had I wift in all these aclions, she tarries
not about the Court, but shall (as an exile) either wander
to her father, or els féeke other fortunes. In this humour,
with a ftearne countenance full of wrath, hee breathed out
this cenfure vnto her before the Péeres, that charged her
that that night shee were not féeene about the Court: for
(quoth he) I haue heard of thy aspring speaches, and in-
tended treasons. This doome was strange vnto ROSALYNDE,
and presently couered with the shield of her innocence, shee
boldly brake out in reuerend tearmes to haue cleared her
selfe: but TORISMOND would admit of no reaason, nor durft
his Lordes plead for ROSALYNDE, although her beautie had
made some of them passionate, seeing the figure of wrath
portraied in his brow. Standing thus all mute, and ROSA-
LYNDE amazed, ALINDA who loued her more than her selfe,
with grieve in her heart, & teares in her eyes, falling downe
on her knées, began to intreate her father thus:

Alindas oration to her father in defence
of faire Rosalynde.

I F (mightie TORISMOND) I offende in pleading for my
friend, let the law of amitie craue pardon for my boldnes;
for where there is depth of affection, there friendhisp al-
loweth a priuiledge. ROSALYNDE and I haue beeene fostered
vp from our infancies, and nurfed vnder the harbour of our
conuerling together with fuch priuate familiarities, that
custome had wrought an vnion of our nature, and the sym-
pathie of our affections such a secreete loue, that we haue two
bodies, and one soule. Then meruaile not (great TORIS-
MOND)
Euphues

MOND) if seeing my friend distraught, I finde my selfe perplexed with a thousand sorrows: for her vertuous and honourable thoughts (which are the glories that maketh women excellent) they be such, as may challenge loue, and race out suspicion: her obedience to your Maieftie, I referre to the censurance of your owne eye, that since her fathers exile hath smothered all griefes with patience, and in the absence of nature, hath honoured you with all dutie, as her owne Father by nouritire: not in word vtering anie discontent, nor in thought (as farre as conieecture may reach) hammering on revenge; onely in all her actions seeking to please you, & to winne my fauour. Her wisedome, silence, chastitie, and other such rich qualities, I need not decaypher: onely it refles for me to conclude in one word, that she is innocent. If then, Fortune who triumphs in variety of miferies, hath prefened some envious person (as minifter of her intended stratagem) to taint ROSALYND with anie furmiffe of treafon, let him be brought to her face, and confirme his accusation by witnesses; which proued, let her die, and ALINDA will execute the maflacre. If none can auouch anie confirmed relation of her intent, vse Iustice my Lord, it is the glorie of a King, and let her liue in your wonted fauour: for if you banifh her, my selfe as copartner of her hard fortunes, wil participate in exile some part of her extremities.

TORISMOND (at this speach of ALINDA) couered his face with such a frowne, as Tyrannie seemed to fit triumphant in his forehead, and checkt her vp with such taunts, as made the Lords (that onlie were hearers) to tremble. Proude girle (quoth he) hath my lookes made thee fo light of tung, or my fauours incouraged thee to be fo forward, that thou dareft presume to preach after thy father? Hath not my yeares more experience than thy youth, and the winter of mine age deeper infight into ciuill policie, than the prime of thy florishing daies? The olde Lion auoides the toyles where the yong one leapes into the net: the care of age is prouident and foresees much: suspicion is a vertue, where a man
a man holds his enemie in his bosome. Thou fonde girle measureft all by present affection, & as thy heart loues thy thoughts cenfure: but if thou knewest that in liking ROSALYND thou hatches vp a bird to pecke out thine owne eyes, thou wouldst intreate as much for her absence, as now thou delightest in her presence. But why do I alledge policie to thee? set you dowe hufwife and fall to your needle: if idlenesse make you so wanton, or libertie so malipert, I can quicklie tie you to a sharper taske: and you (maide) this night be packing either into Arden to your father, or whether beft it shall content your humour, but in the Court you shall not abide. This rigorous replie of TORISMOND nothing amazed ALINDA, for still she prosecuted her plea in the defence of ROSALYND, wishing her father (if his cenfure might not be reuerst) that he would appoint her partner of her exile; which if he refused to doo, either she would (by some secret meanes) steale out and followe her, or els end her daies with some desperate kinde of death. When TORISMOND heard his daughter so resoluite, his heart was so hardned against her, that he set dowe a definitiue and peremptorie sentence that they shoulde both be banishe: which prefentlie was done. The Tyrant rather choosing to hazard the losse of his only child, than any waies to put in question the state of his kingdom: so fuspicious and seareful is the conscience of an vfurper. Well, although his Lords perconved him to retaine his owne daughter, yet his resolution might not bee reuerst, but both of them must away from the court without either more companie or delay. In he went with great melancholie, and left these two Ladies alone. ROSALYND waxed very sad, and sat dowe and wept. ALINDA she smiled, and sitting by her friende began thus to comfort her.

Alindas
Euphues

Alindas comfort to perplexed

Rofalynd.

Why how now ROFALYN, dismaide with a frowne of contrarie fortune? Haue I not oft heard thee fay that high minds were discouered in fortunes contempt, and heroycall seene in the depth of extremities? Thou wert wont to telle others that complained of diftresse, that the sweeteest fauor for miserie was patience; and the onlie medicine for want, that precious implaister of content: being such a good Phisition to others, wilt thou not minister receipts to thy selfe? But perchance thou wilt fay:

Consolenti nunquam caput doluit.

Why then, if the patients that are sicke of this diseaue can finde in themthes neither reason to perfwade, nor arte to cure; yet (ROFALYN) admit of the counfaile of a friend, and applie the fauors that may appease thy passions. If thou grieueest that beeing the daughter of a Prince, and enuie thwarteth thee with such hard exigents, thinke that royaltie is a faire marke; that Crowes have crosses when mirth is in Cottages; that the fairer the Rose is, the sooner it is bitten with Catterpillers; the more orient the Pearle is, the more apt to take a blemish; and the greatest birth, as it hath most honoure, so it hath much enuie. If then Fortune aymeth at the fairest, be patient ROFALYN, for first by thine exile thou goest to thy father; nature is higher prised than wealth, & the loue of ones parents ought to bee more precious than all dignities: why then doth my ROFALYN grieue at the frowne of TORISMOND, who by offering her a prejudiice, proffers her a greater pleasure? and more (mad laffe) to be melanchalie, when thou haft with thee ALINDA a frend, who will be a faithfull copartner of all thy misfortunes, who hath left her father to followe thee, and chooseth rather to brooke all extremities than to forfake thy presence. What ROFALYN:

Solamen
golden Legacie.

Solamen miseris socios habuisse doloris.

Chéereie woman, as wee haue been bedfellowes in royaltie, we will be fellowe mates in pouertie; I will euer bée thy ALINDA, and thou shalt euer rest to me ROSALYNDE: so shal the world canonize our friendship, and speake of ROSALYNDE and ALINDA, as they did of PILADES and ORESTES. And if euer Fortune smyle and wee returne to our former honour, then folding our selues in the swéeete of our friendship, wee shal merelie say (calling to minde our forepassed miseries);

Olim haec meminisse iuvabit.

At this ROSALYNDE began to comfort her; and after shée had wept a fewe kind teares in the bosome of her ALINDA, she gave her heartie thanks, and then they sat them downe to confult how they should trauell. ALINDA grieued at nothing but that they might haue no man in their companie: saying, it would be their greatest prejudice in that two women went wandring without either guide or attendant. Tuhh (quoth ROSALYNDE) art thou a woman, and haft not a sodaine shift to prevent a misfortune? I (thou feest) am of a tall stature, and would very well become the person and apparell of a page, thou shalt bee my Mistris, and I will play the man so properly, that (trust me) in what company so euer I come I will not bee discovered; I will buy mee a suite, and haue my rapier very handsomely at my side, and if any knaue offer wrong, your page will shew him the point of his weapon. At this ALINDA smiled, and vpon this they agreed, and presently gathered vp all their Jewels, which they trussed vp in a Cailet, and ROSALYNDE in all haft provided her of robes, and ALINDA (from her royall weedes) put her selfe in more homemie attire. Thus fitted to the purpose, away goe these two friends, haung now changed their names, ALINDA being called ALIENA, and ROSALYNDE GANIMEDE: they trauailed along the Vineyards, and by many by-waies; at last got to the Forrest side, where they trauailed by the space of two or three daies without seeing a nie creature, being often in danger of wild beasts, and pay-
Euphues

ned with many passionate favorows. Now the black Oxe
began to tread on their feete, and ALINDA thought of her
wonted royltie: but when she cast her eyes on her ROSA-
LVND, she thought everie danger a step to honour. Pasling
thus on along, about midday they came to a Fountaine,
compt with a grove of Cipresse trees, so cunninglie and
curiouslie planted, as if some Goddesse had intreated Na-
ture in that place to make her an Arbour. By this Foun-
taine sat ALIENA and her GANIMEDE, and foorth they pulled
such victualls as they had, and fed as merillie as if they had
been in Paris with all the Kings delicates: ALIENA onely
griefing that they could not so much as meete with a shep-
heard to discurse them the way to some place where they
might make their aboade. At last GANIMEDE casting vp his
eye espied where on a tree was ingrauen certaine verfes:
which asfoone as he espied, he cried out; bee of good cheere
Mistris, I spie the figures of men; for here in these trees be
ingrauen certaine verfes of shepheards, or some other
swaines that inhabite here about. With that ALIENA start
vp ioyfull to heare thefe newes; and looked, where they
found carued in the barke of a Pine treè this passion.

Montanus passion.

H

Ad'e thou been borne whereas perpetuall cold
Makes Tanais hard, and mountaines filuer old:
Had I complain'd unto a marble stone;
Or to the flouds bewraide my bitter mone,
I then could beare the burden of my grieue.
But eu'n the pride of Countries at thy birth,
Whil'st heavens did smille did new aray the earth
with flowers chife.
Yet thou the flower of beautie blessed borne,
Haët pretie lookes, but all attir'd in scorne.

Had
golden Legacie.

Had I the power to weep sweet Mirrhas tears;  
Or by my plaints to pierce repining ears;  
Hadst thou the heart to smile at my complaint;  
To scorn the woes that doth my heart attain,  
I then could bear the burden of my grieve.  
But not my tears, but truth with thee prevails,  
And seeming sour my sorrowes thee assails:  
Yet small relief.

For if thou wilt thou art of marble hard;  
And if thou please my suit shall soone be heard.

No doubt (quoth ALIENA) this poesie is the passion of some perplexed shepheard, that being enamoured of some faire and beautifull Shepheardesse, suffered some sharpe repulse, and therefore complained of the crueltie of his Mistris. You may see (quoth GANIMEDE) what mad cattell you women be, whose hearts sometimes are made of Adamant that will touch with no impression; and sometime of waxe that is fit for euerie forme: they delight to be courted, and then they glorie to seeme coy; and when they are most desired then they freee with didaine: and this fault is so common to the sex, that you see it painted out in the shepheards passions, who found his Mistris as froward as he was enamoured. And I pray you (quoth ALIENA) if your roabes were off, what mettall are you made of that you are so satyrical against women? Is it not a foule bird defiles the owne nest? Beware (GANIMEDE) that ROSADER heare you not; if he doo, perchance you will make him leape so far from loue, that he wil anger euery vain in your hart. Thus (quoth GANIMEDE) I keepe decorum, I speake now as I am ALIENAS page, not as I am GERISMONDS daughter: for put me but into a peticoate, and I will stand in defiance to the uttermost that women are courteous, constant, vertuous, and what not. Stay there (quoth ALIENA) and no more words; for yonder be Caracters grauen vpon the barke of the tall Beech trée: let vs see (quoth GANIMEDE): and with
Euphues

that they read a fancie written to this effect.

First shall the heavens want starrie light;
The seas be robbed of their waues;
The day want sunne, and sunne want bright;
The night want shade, the dead men graues;
    The Aprill, flowers and leafe and tree,
Before I falfe my faith to thee.

First shall the tops of highest hills
By humble plaines be overpride;
And Poets scorne the Muses quills,
And fish forsake the water glide;
    And Iris loose her coloured weed,
Before I faile thee at thy need.

First direfull hate shall turne to peace,
And love relent in deepe disdaine;
And death his fatall stroake shall cease,
And envie pitie every paine;
    And pleasure mourne, and sorowe smile,
Before I talke of any guile.

First time shall stay his statelys race,
And winter bleffe his browes with corne;
And snow bemoysten Julies face;
And winter spring, and Sommer mourne,
    Before my pen by helpe of fame,
Cease to recite thy sacred name.
    Montanus.

No doubt (quoth GANIMEDE) this protestation grewe
from one full of passions. I am of that mind too (quoth A-
LIENA) but see I pray, when poore women seeke to keepe
themselves chaft, how men woo them with many fained
promises, alluring with sweet words as the SYRENS, and af-

38
golden Legacie. 16

ter proouing as trothless as AENEAS. Thus promised DEMOPHOON to his PHILLIS, but who at last grewe more false? The reason was (quoth GANIMEDE) that they were womens sones, and tooke that fault of their mother; for if man had growen from man, as ADAM did from the earth, men had never been troubled with inconstancie. Leave off (quoth ALIEN A) to taunt thus bitterly, or els Ile pul off your pages apparell and whip you (as VENUS doth her wantons) with nettles. So you will (quoth GANIMEDE) perswade me to flattrie, and that needs not: but come (seeing we haue found heere by this Fount the tract of Shepheards by their Madrigals and Roundelaies) let vs forward; for either we shal finde some foldes, sheepcoates, or els some cottages wherein for a day or two to rest. Cotent (quoth ALIENA) and with that they roze vp, and marched forward till towards the euene: and then comming into a faire valley (compasse with mountaines, whereon grewe many pleasant shrubbs) they might descrye where two flockes of sheepe did feede. Then looking about, they might perceiue where an old shepheard sat (and with him a yong swaine) under a couert most pleasentlie scituated. The ground where they sat was daipred with FLORAS riches, as if she ment to wrap TELLUS in the glorie of her vestments: round about in the forme of an Amphitheater were most curiouslie planted Pine trees, interseamed with Limons and Citrons, which with the thinke of their boughes so shadowed the place, that PHŒBUS could not prye into the secret of that Arbour; so vnited were the tops with so thicke a cloture, that VENUS might there in her iollitie haue dallied vnseene with her deere paramour. Faft by (to make the place more gorgeous) was there a Fount so Christalline and clære, that it seemed DIANA with her DRIADES and HEMADRIADES had that spring, as the secret of all their bathings. In this glorious Arbour sat these two shepheards (seeing their sheepe feede) playing on their pipes many pleasent tunes, and from musick and melodie falling into much amorous chat: drawing more
Euphues
more nigh wee might descrie the countenance of the one to
be full of forowe, his face to be the verie pourtraiture of dif-
content, and his eyes full of woes, that liuing he seemed to
dye: wee (to heare what thefe were) stole priuille behind the
thicke, where we ouerheard this discourse.

A pleasant Eglog betweene Montanus
and Coridon.

Coridon.

Ay shepheards boy, what makes thee greet so sore?
Why leues thy pipe his pleasure and delight?
Yong are thy yeares, thy cheekes with royes dight:
Then sing for ioy (weet swaine) and figh no more.

This milke white Poppie and this climbing Pine
Both promise shade; then sit thee doun and sing,
And make these woods with pleasant notes to ring,
Till Phoebus daine all Westward to decline.

Montanus.

Ah (Coridon) vnmeet is melodie
To him whom proud contempt hath ouerborne:
Slaine are my ioyes by Phoebes bitter scorne,
Farre hence my weale and nere my iepardie.

Loues burning brand is couched in my brest,
Making a Phoenix of my faintfull hart:
And though his furie doo inforce my smar,
Ay blyth am I to honour his behel.

Prepare to woes fince so my Phoebe wills,
My lookes dismaid fince Phoebe will disdaine:
I banish blisse and welcome home my paine;
So streame my teares as showers from Alpine hills.

In
golden Legacie.

In errours maske I blindfolde judgements eye,
I fetter reason in the snares of lust,
I seeme secure, yet know not how to trust;
I live by that, which makes me living die.

Dewyd of rest, companion of distresse,
Plague to myselfe, consumed by my thought;
How may my voyce or pipe in tune be brought?
Since I am rest of folace and delight.

Coridon.

Ah Lorrell lad, what makes thee Herre lourne?
A fugred harme, a poyson full of pleasure,
A painted krine ful-fild with rotten treasure,
A heauen in shew, a hell to them that prove.

Againe, in seeming shadowed still with want,
A broken staffe which follie doth upholde,
A flower that fades with everie frostie calde,
An orient rose springe from a wythred plant.

A minutes ioy to gaine a world of greefe,
A subtill net to snare the idle minde,
A seeing Scorpion, yet in seeming blinde,
A poore reioyce, a plague without releefe.

For thy Montanus follow mine arreede,
(Whom age hath taught the traynes that fancie useth)
Leave foolish love; for beautie wit abuseth,
And drownes (by follie) vertues springing feede.

Montanus.

So blames the childe the flame, because it burnes;
And bird the snare, because it doth intrap;

And
Euphues

And fooles true loue, because of sorrie hap;
And saylers curfse the shipe that overturnes:

But would the childe forbeare to play with flame,
And birds beware to trust the fowlers ginne,
And fooles foresee before they fall and sinne,
And maisters guide their ships in better frame;

The childe would praise the fire, because it warmes;
And birds rejoyce, to see the fowler faile;
And fooles prevent, before their plagues prevaile;
And saylers bless the barke that saues from harmses.

Ah Coridon, though manie be thy yeares,
And crooked elde hath some experience left;
Yet is thy minde of judgement quite bereft
In view of loue, whose power in me appeares.

The ploughman little wots to turne the pen,
Or bookeman skills to guide the ploughmans cart,
Nor can the cobler count the tearmes of Art,
Nor base men judge the thoughts of mightie men;

Nor wythered age (vumete for beauties guide,
Vn-capable of loues impression)
Discourse of that, whose choyce posseffion
May nouer to so base a man be tied.

But I (whom nature makes of tender molde,
And youth most pliant yeeldes to fancies fire)
Doo buildc my hauen and heaven on sweete desire,
On sweete desire more deere to me than golde.

Thinke I of loue, & how my lines aspire?
How hast the Muses to imbrace my browes,
And hem my temples in with lawrell bowes,
golden Legacie.

And fill my braines with chaste and holy fire?

Then leave my lines their homely equipage,
Mounted beyond the circle of the Sunne;
Amas'd I read the stile when I haue done,
And Herry Love that wont that heavenly rage.

Of Phoebe then, of Phoebe then I sing,
Drawing the puritie of all the sheares,
The pride of earth, or what in heauen appeares,
Her honoured face and fame to light to bring.

In fluent numbers and in pleasant vaines,
If rob both sea and earth of all their state,
To praise her parts: I charme both time and fate,
To blesse the Nymph that yeeldes me love fickle pains.

My sheepe are turnd to thoughts, whom froward will
Guides in the restesfe Laborynth of love,
Feare lends them pastore wherefoere they move,
And by their death their life reueth still,

Hy sheepooke is my pen, mine oaten reede
My paper, where my manie woes are written.
Thus filly swaine (with love and fancie bitten)
I trace the plaines of paine in wofull weede.

Yet are my cares, my broken sleepe, my teares,
My dreames, my doubts, for Phoebe sweete to me:
Who wayteth heauen in sorrowes vale must be,
And glorie shines where danger most appeares.

Then Coridon although I blythe me not,
Blame me not man, since sorrow is my sweete;
So willeth Love, and Phoebe thinkes it meete,
And kinde Montanus liketh well his lot.

F 2

Coridon.
Euphues

Coridon.

Oh playlesse youth, by errour so misguided;
Where will prescribeth lawes to perfect wits,
Where reason mournes, and blame in triumph fits,
And folly preysoneth all that time provided.

With wilfull blindness bleard, preparde to shame,
Prone to neglect Occasion when she smiles:
Alas that Loue (by fond and froward guiles)
Should make thee tracit the path to endless blame.

Ah (my Montanus) curfed is the charme
That hath bewitched so thy youthfull eyes:
Leaue off in time to like these vanities;
Be forward to thy good, and fly thy harme.

As manie bees as Hiba daily shielde;
As manie fritie as fleete on Oceans face,
As manie heardes as on the earth doo trace,
As manie flowres as decke the fragrant fields,

As manie starres as glorious heauen containes,
As manie stormes as wayward winter weepes,
As manic plagues as hell inclosed keepes;
So manie griefes in loue, so manie pains.

Susspitions, thoughts, defires, opinions, praiers,
Mistakes, misedeedes, fond ioyes, and fainied peace,
Illusions, dreames, great paines, and small increase,
Vowes, hopes, acceptance, scornes, and deepe despaires,

Truce, warre, and woe doo waite at beauties gate;
Time lost, lament, reports, and priuie grudge,
And last, fierce Loue is but a partiall Iudge,

Who

44
golden Legacie.

Who yeeldes for service shame, for friendship hate,

Montanus.

All Adder-like I stop mine eares (fond swaine)
So charme no more; for I will never change.
Call home thy flockes in time that stragling range:
For loe, the Sunne declineth hence amaine.

Terentius.

In amore haeo omnia insunt vitia, industria, inimicitia, belpum, pax rursum: incerta haeo si tu postules, ratione certa fieri nihilops agas, quam si des operam, ut cum ratione insanias.

The shepheards hauing thus ended their Eglogue, ALIENA stept with GANIMEDE from behinde the thicket: at whose sodaine sight the shepheards arose, and ALIENA saluted them thus; Shepheards all haile, (for such wee deeme you by your flockes) and Louers, good lucke; (for such you seeume by your passions) our eyes being witnesse of the one, and our eares of the other. Although not by Loue, yet by Fortune, I am a distresse Gentlewoman, as sorrowful as you are passionate, and as full of woes as you of perplexed thoughts: wandring this way in a forrest vnknowne, onely I and my Page, wareied with travaile would faine haue some place of rest. May you appoint vs anie place of quiet harbour, (be it never so meane) I shall be thankfull to you, contented in my selfe, and gratefull to whosoeuer shall bee mine hoste. CORIDON hearing the Gentlewoman speake so courteously returned her mildly and reverently this aunswere.

Faire Mistres, we returne you as heartie a welcome, as you gaue vs a courteous salute. A shepheard I am, & this a loyer, as watchful to please his wench, as to feed his sheepe:
Euphues

full of fancies, and therefore (say I) full of follies. Exhort him I may, but perfwade him I cannot; for Loue admits neither of counfaile, nor reason. But leaving him to his passions, if you be distrest, I am sorrowfull such a faire creature is crost wth calamitie: pray for you I may, but relieue you I cannot: marry, if you want lodging, if you vouch to shrowd your salues in a shepheard's cotage, my house (for this night) shalbe your harbour. ALIENA thankt CORIDON greatly, and presently fate her downe and GANIMEDE by her. CORIDON looking earnestly vpon her, and with a curious suruay viewing all her perfections, applauded (in his thought) her excellence, and pitying her distresse, was defious to heare the cause of her misfortunes, began to questio with her thus.

If I should not (faire Damofell) occasionate offence, or renue your griefes by rubbing the scarre, I would faie craue so much favour, as to know the cause of your misfortune: and why, and whether you wander with your page in so dangerous a forrest. ALIENA (that was as courteous as she was faire) made this reply; Shepheard, a friendlie demand ought neuer to be offensivue, and question of courtesie carrier privuleaged pardons in their forheads. Know therefor, to discouer my fortunes were to renue my sorrowes, and I shoule by discoursing my mishaps, but rake her out of the cinders. Therefore let this suffice (gentle shepheard) my distresse is as great as my trouell is dangerous, and I wander in this forrest, to light on some cottage where I and my Page may dwell: for I meane to buy some farme, and a flocke of sheepe, and so become a shepheardesse, meaning to liue low, and content me with a countrey life: for I haue heard the fwaynes say, that they drunke without suspition, & slept without care. Marry Mistres (quoth CORIDON) if you meane so you came in a good time, for my landlord intends to sell both the farme I till, and the flocke I keepe, & cheap you may haue them for readie money: and for a shepheardes life (oh Mistresse) did you but liue a while in their content, you
golden Legacie.

you would fayre the Court were rather a place of forrowe, than of solace. Here (Mistresse) shall not Fortune thwart you, but in meane misfortunes, as the losse of a few sheepe, which, as it breedes no beggerie, so it can bee no extreme prejudice: the next yeare may mend al with a fresh increafe. Enuiie stirres not vs, wee couet not to climbe, our desires mount not aboue our degrees, nor our thoughts aboue our fortunes. Care cannot harbour in our cottages, nor doo our homely couches know broken slumbers: as we exceede not in diet, so we haue inough to satiiffie: and Mistres I haue so much Latin, Satis est quod sufficit.

By my troth shepeheard (quoth ALIENA) thou makest me in loue with your country life, and therefore sende for thy Landlord, and I will buy thy farme and thy flockes, & thou shalt still (vnder me) be overeer of them both: onely for pleasurefake I and my Page wil serue you, lead the flocks to the field, and solde them: thus will I liue quiet, vnknown, and contented. This newes so gladded the hart of CORIDON, that he should not be put out of his farme, that (putting off his shepheard's bonnet) he did her all the reuerence that he might. But all this while fate MONTANUS in a muse thinking of the crueltie of his PHŒBE, whom he woed long, but was in no hope to winne. GANIMEDE who still had the remembrance of ROSADER in his thoughts, tooke delight to see the poore shepheard passionate, laughing at loue that in all his actions was so imperious. At last when she had noted his teares that stole downe his cheekes, and his sighes that broake from the center of his heart, pittyng his lament, she demanded of CORIDON why the young shepheard looked so sorrowfull? Oh sir (quoth he) the boy is in loue. Why (quoth GANIMEDE) can shepheards loue? I (quoth MONTANUS) and ouerloue, els shouldst not thou see mee so pensiue. Loue (I tell thee) is as precious in a shepheardes eye as in the lookes of a King, and we countrey fwayne intertain fancie with as great delight, as the proudest courtier doth affection. Opportunitie (that is the sweetest freind
Euphues

to VENUS) harboureth in our cottages, and loyaltie (the chiefeft sealtie that CUPID requires) is found more among shepheards than higher degrees. Then afke not if fuch fily swaynes can louve? What is the caufe then, quoth GANIMEDE, that Loue being fo sweete to thee, thou lookeft fo forrowfull? Because, quoth MONTANUS, the partie beloued is froward: and hauing courtesie in her lookes, holdeth difdaine in her tongues ende. What hath she then quoth ALIENA, in her heart? Desire (I hope Madame) quoth he: or els my hope loft, despaire in Loue were death. As thus they chatted, the Sunne being readie to fet, and they not hauing folded their sheepe, CORIDON requestted she would fit there with her Page, till MONTANUS and he lodged their sheepe for that night. You shall goe quoth ALIENA, but firft I will intreate MONTANUS to fing some amorous Sonnet, that hee made when he hath been deeply passionate. That I will quoth MONTANUS: and with that he began thus.

Montanus Sonnet.

Phœbe fate
Sweete fhe fate,
Sweete fate Phœbe when I saw her,
White her brow,
Coy her eye:
Brow and eye how much you please me?

Words I spent,
Sighes I sent,
Sighes and words could never draw her.

Oh my loue
Thou art loft,
Since no fight could ever ease thee.

Phœbe
golden Legacie.

Phœbe sat
By a fount;
Sitting by a fount I spied her:
Sweet her touch,
Rare her voyce;
Touch and voice what may distaine you?
As she sung,
I did sigh,
And by sighs whilst that I tride her.
Oh mine eyes
You did loose
Her first sight whose want did paine you.

Phœbes flockes
White as wooll,
Yet were Phœbes locks more whiter.
Phœbes eyes
Douelike mild,
Douelike eyes both mild and cruel.
Montan sweares.
In your lampes
He will die for to delight her.
Phœbe yeeld,
Or I die;
Shall true hearts be fancies fuel?

Montanus had no sooner ended his sonnet, but Coridon
with a lowe courtesie rose vp and went with his fellow and
shut their sheepe in the foldes: and after returning to Aliena and Ganimed, conducted them home weare to his
poore Cottage. By the way there was much good chat with
Montanus about his loues; he reslouing Aliena that Phœbe
was the fairest Shepherdice in all France, and that in
his eye her beautie was equall with the Nymphs. But
(quoth hee) as of all ftones the Diamond is most cleerest,
and yet most hard for the Lapidory to cut; as of all flowers

G
Euphues
the Rose is the fairest, and yet guarded with the sharpest
prickles: so of all our Countrey Lasses PHŒBE is the
brightest, but the most coy of all to stoope vnto desire. But
let her take heed quoth he, I haue heard of NARCISSUS, who
for his high disdain against Loue, perished in the follie of
his owne loue. With this they were at CORIDONS cotage,
where MONTANUS parted from them, and they went in to
rest. ALINDA and GANIMEDE glad of so contented a shelter,
made merrie with the poore swayne: and though they had
but countrey fare and courte lodging, yet their welcome
was so great, and their cares so litle, that they counted their
diet delicate, and slept as soundly as if they had been in the
court of TORISMOND. The next morne they lay long in bed,
as weared with the toyle of vnaccustomed travaile: but
assoone as they got vp, ALIENA resolue to set vp her
rest, and by the helpe of CORIDON swept a barga ne with his
Landlord, and so became Mistres of the farme & the flocke:
her selfe putting on the attire of a shephearde, and GAN-
IMEDE of a yong swaine: euerie day leading foroorth her flocks
with such delight, that she held her exile happie, and thought
no content to the bliffe of a Countrey cottage. Leauing her
thus famous amongst the shepheards of Arden, againe to
SALADYN.
When SALADYN had a long while concealed a secret re-
solution of reuenge, and could no longer hide fire in the flax,
nor oyle in the flame; (for enuie is like lightning, that will
appeare in the darkeft fogge). It chaunced on a morning
verie early he calde vp certaine of his servaunts, and went
with them to the chamber of ROSADER, which being open,
he entred with his crue, and surprised his brother beeing a
sleepe, and bound him in fetters, and in the midst of his hall
chained him to a poaft. ROSADER amazed at this strange
chaunce, began to reason with his brother about the cause of
this sodaine extremitie, wherein he had wrongd & what
fault he had committed worthie so sharpe a penaunce. SALA-
DYNE answered him onely with a looke of disdain, & went
his
golden Legacie.

his way, leaving poore ROSADER in a deepe perplexitie. Who (thus abused) fell into sundrie passions, but no meanes of releafe could be had: whereupon (for anger) he grew into a discontented melancholy. In which humour he continued two or three dayes without meate: insomuch, that seeing his brother would give him no fooe, he fell into despaire of his life. Which ADAM SPENCER the olde seruaut of Sir JOHN of Bourdeaux seeing, touched with the dutie and loue he ought to his olde Master, felt a remorse in his conscience of his fonnes mishap: and therefore, although SALADYNE had given a generall charge to his seruants, that none of them vpon paine of death shoulde giue either meate or drinke to ROSADER, yet ADAM SPENCER in the night arose secretely, and brought him such victualls as hee could provid, and vnlockt him and set him at libertie. After ROSADER had well seafted himselfe, and felt he was loose, straignt his thoughts aymed at reuenge, and now (all being a sleepe) hee would haue quit SALADYNE with the methode of his owne mischief. But ADAM SPENCER perswaded him to the contrarie, with these reafons; Sir quoth he, be content, for this night go a-gaine into your olde fetters, so shall you trie the faith of friends, and faue the life of an olde seruant. To morrowe hath your brother inuieted al your kindred and allyes to a solempne breakfast, onely to see you, telling them all, that you are mad, & faine to be tied to a poast. Affone as they come, make complaint to them of the abuse proffered you by SALADYNE. If they redresse you, why so: but if they passe ouer yourplaints fisco pede, and holde with the violence of your brother before your innocence, then thus: I will leaue you vnlockt that you may brake out at your pleasure, and at the ende of the hall shall you see stand a couple of good pollaxes, one for you, and another for me. When I giue you a wink, shake off your chaynes, and let vs play the men, and make hauoque amongst them, drive them out of the house and maintaine possession by force of armes, till the King hath made a redresse of your abuses. These wordes of ADAM SPENCER
Euphues

SPENCER so perfwaded ROSADER, that he went to the place of his punishment, and stood there while the next morning. About the time appoynted, came all the guefts hidden by SALADYNE, whom he intreated with courteous and curious intertainment, as they al perceiued their welcome to be great. The tables in the hal where ROSADER was tyed, were couered, and SALADYNE bringing in his guefts together, shewed them where his brother was bound, and was inchaine as a man lunaticke. ROSADER made replie, and with some inuestiges made complaints of the wrongs proffered him by SALADYNE, desiring they would in pitie seake some meanes for his reliefe. But in vaine, they had stopt their eares with VLISSES, that were his words neuer so forceable, he breathed onely his passions into the winde. They carelesse, fat down with SALADYNE to dinner, being verie frolickie and pleasant, washing their heads well with wine. At laft, when the fume of the grape had entred peale meale into their braines, they began in fatoryrical speaches to raile against ROSADER: which ADAM SPENCER no longer brooking, gauie the signe, and ROSADER flaking off his chaines got a pollax in his hand, and flew amongst them with such violence and fury, that he hurt manie, flew some, and draue his brother and all the rest quite out of the house. Seeing the coast cleare, he shut the doores, and being sore an hunred, and seeing such good victuals, he fate him downe with ADAM SPENCER and such good fellows as he knew were honeft men, and there feasted themselves with such prouision as SALADYNE had prepared for his frieuds. After they had taken their repaft, ROSADER rampierd vp the house, leaft vpon a sodaine his brother shoulde raise some crue of his tenaunts, and surprifie them vnawares. But SALADYNE tooke a contrari course, and went to the Sheriffe of the shyre and made complaint of ROSADER, who giuing credite to SALADYNE, in a determined resolution to reuenge the Gentlemans wrongs, tooke with him fiue and twentie tall men, and made a vowe, either to breake into the hous and take ROSADER, or els to coope him in till he made him yeeld by

52
golden Legacie.

by famine. In this determination, gathering a crue together he went forward to set Saladyne in his former estate. Newes of this was brought vnto Rosader, who smilling at the cowardize of his brother, brookt all the injuries of Fortune with patience, expecting the comming of the Sheriffe. As he walkt vpon the battlements of the house, he defcryed where Saladyne and he drew neare, with a troupe of lustie gallants. At this he smilde, and calde vp Adam Spencer, and shewed him the enuious treacherie of his brother, and the folly of the Sheriffe to bee so credulous: now Adam, quoth he, what shal I doo? It rests for me, either to yeele vp the house to my brother and seeke a reconcilement, or els issue out, and breake through the companie with courage, for coopt in like a coward I will not bee. If I submit (ah Adam) I dishonour my selfe, and that is worfe than death; for by such open disgraces the fame of men growes odious: if I issue out amongst them, fortune may favoure me, and I may escape with life; but suppose the worst: if I be flaine, then my death shall be honourable to me, and so inequall a revengge infamous to Saladyne. Why then Master forward and feare not, out amongst them, they bee but faint hearted lozells, and for Adam Spencer, if he die not at your foote, say he is a daftard. These words cheere vp so the hart of yong Rosader, that he thought himselfe sufficient for them all, & therefore prepared weapons for him and Adam Spencer, and were reade to intertaine the Sheriffe: for no soone came Saladyne and he to the gates, but Rosader vntookt for leapt out and affailed them, wounded manie of them, and causd the rest to glue backe, so that Adam and hee broke through the preafe in despite of them all, and tooke their way towards the forrest of Arden. This repulse so set the Sheriffes heart on fire to revengge, that he straight rayfed al the countrey, and made Hue and Crie after them. But Rosader and Adam knowing full well the secrete wayes that led through the vineyards, stole away priuely through the province of Bourdeaux, & escaped safe to the forrest of Ar-
Euphues

den. Being come thether, they were glad they had so good a harbour: but Fortune (who is like the Camelion) variable with euerie object, & constant in nothing but inconstacie, thought to make them myrrours of her mutabilite, and therefore stille crost them thus contrarily. Thinking stille to passe on by the bywaies to get to Lions, they chaunsed on a path that led into the thicke of the forrest, where they wan-dred fiewe or five dayes without meat, that they were almost famished, finding neither shepheard nor cottage to relieue them: and hunger growing on so extreame, ADAM SPENCER (being olde) began first to faint, and sittign him downe on a hill, and looking about him, espied where ROSADER laye as feable and as ill perplexed: which sight made him shedde teares, and to fall into these bitter tearmes.

Adam Spencers speach.

O H how the life of man may well be compared to the state of the Ocean seas, that for euerie calme hath a thousand stormes: resembling the Rose tre, that for a few faire flowers, hath a multitude of sharpe prickles: all our pleasures ende in paine, and our higheste delights, are crost with deepest discontentes. The ioyes of man, as they are few, so are they momentarie, scarce ripe before they are rotten; and wythering in the blossome, either parched with the heate of enuy, or fortune. Fortune, oh inconstant friend, that in all thy dedes are froward and fickle, delighting in the pouertie of the loweft, and the overthrow of the higheste, to decypher thy inconstancie. Thou standst vpon a gloabe, and thy wings are plumed with times feathers, that thou maist euer be reflisse; thou art double faced like IANUS, carrying frownes in the one to threaten, and smiles in the other to betray; thou profferest an Eele, and perfournest a Scorpion; and where thy greatest favours be, there is the feare of the extreamest misfortunes; so variable are all thy acti-
golden Legacie.

ons. But why ADAM doost thou exclaine against fortune? she laughs at the plaints of the distressed; and there is nothing more pleasing vsnto her, than to heare fooles boast in her fading allurements, or sorrowfull men to discouer the low of their passions. Glut her not ADAM then with content, but thwart her with brooking all mishappes with patience. For there is no greater checke to the pride of fortune, than with a resolute courage to passe over her crossses without care. Thou art olde ADAM, and thy haires wax white, the Palme trée is alreadie full of bloomes, and in the furrows of thy face appeares the Kalenders of death? Wert thou blessed by fortune thy yeares could not be manie, nor the date of thy life long; then Sith Nature must haue her due, what is it for thee to resigne her debt a little before the day. Ah, it is not this which grieueth mee: nor doo I care what mishaps Fortune can wage against me: but the sight of ROSADER, that galleth vsnto the quicke. When I remember the worships of his houfe, the honour of his fathers, and the vertues of himselfe; then doo I say, that fortune and the fates are most injurious, to cenfure so hard extreames, against a youth of so great hope. Oh ROSADER, thou art in the flower of thine age, and in the pride of thy yeares, buxsome and full of May. Nature hath prodigally inricht thee with her favours, and vertue made thee the myrrour of her excellence: and now through the decree of the vniust starres, to haue all these good partes nipped in the blade, and blemisht by the inconstancie of Fortune. Ah ROSADER, could I helpe thee, my grieue were the leffe, and happie shold my death be, if it might be the beginning of thy reliefe: but seeing we perish both in one extreame, it is a double forrowe. What shall I do? preuent the sight of his further misfortune, with a present dispatch of mine owne life. Ah, despaire is a merci-leases sinne.

As he was readie to go forward in his passion, he looked earnestly on ROSADER, and seeing him change colour, he rife vp and went to him, and holding his temples, saide, What cheere
Euphues

cheere master? though all faile, let not the heart faint: the
courage of a man is shewed in the resolution of his death. At
these words ROSADER lifted vp his eye, and looking on A-
DAM SPENCER began to wepe. Ah ADAM quoth he, I for-
rowe not to die, but I grieue at the manner of my death.
Might I with my launce encounter the enemie, and so die in
the field, it were honour, and content: might I (ADAM)
combat with some wilde beast, and perishe as his pray, I wer
satysfied; but to die with hunger, O ADAM, it is the extre-
meest of all extreames. Master (quoth hee) you see wee are
both in one predicament, and long I cannot liue without
meate, seeing therefore we can find no foode, let the death of
the one preferue the life of the other. I am olde, and ouer-
worne with age, you are young, and are the hope of many
honours: let me then die, I will presently cut my veynes, &
master with the warme bloud relieue your fainting spirits:
fucke on that till I ende, and you be comforted. With that
ADAM SPENCER was readie to pull out his knife, when RO-
SADER full of courage (though verie faint) rofe vp, and wiht
ADAM SPENCER to fit there till his retourn: for my minde
giues me quoth he, I shall bring thee meate. With that, like
a mad man he rofe vp, and ranged vp and downe the woods,
seeking to encounter some wilde beast with his rapier, that
either he might carry his friend ADAM food, or els pledge
his life in pawne of his loyaltie. It chaunced that day, that
GERISMOND the lawfull king of France banished by TORIS-
MOND, who with a luftie crue of Outlawes liued in that fo-
rest, that day in honour of his Birth made a Feast to all his
bolde yeomen, and frolickt it with store of wine and venifon,
fitting all at a long table vnder the shadowe of lymon trees.
To that place by chance Fortune conducted ROSADER, who
seeing such a crue of braue men hauing store of that, for
want of which he and ADAM perished, he stept boldly to the
boords end, and faluted the companie thus.

Whatsoere thou bee that art master of these luftie squires,
I falute thee as graciously, as a man in extreame di-
stresse

56
golden Legacie.

stresse may; knowe that I and a fellow friend of mine, are here famished in the forreft for want of food: perish we must vnlesse relieved by thy fauours. Therefore if thou be a Gentleman, giue meate to men, and to such men as are cuerie way worthie of life; let the proudest squire that fittes at thy table, rife & encounter with me in anie honourable point of actiuitie what soeuer, and if he and thou proue me not a man, send me a way comfortlesse. If thou refuse this, as a niggard of thy cates, I will haue amongst you with my sword; for rather will I die valiantly, than perish with so cowardly an extreame. GERISMOND looking him earnestly in the face, and seeing so proper a Gentleman in so bitter a passion, was moued with so great pitie; that rising from the table, he took him by the hand and bad him welcome, willing him to sit downe in his place, and in his roome not onely to eate his fill, but be Lord of the feast. Gramercie sir (quoth ROSADER) but I haue a feeble friend that lies heereby famished almost for food, aged and threfore leffe able to abide the extremity of hunger than my selfe, and dishonour it were for me to taste one crum, before I made him partner of my fortunes: therefore I will runne and fetch him, and then I will gratefully accept of your proffer. Away hies ROSADER to ADAM SPENCER, and tells him the newes, who was glad of so happie fortune, but so feeble he was that hee could not goe: whereupon ROSADER got him vp on his backe, and brought him to the place. Which when GERISMOND & his men saw, they greatly applauded their league of friendship; & ROSADER having GERISMONDS place assigned him, would not sit there himselfe, but set downe ADAM SPENCER. Well to be short, those hungrie squires fell to their victuals, and feasted themselves with good delicates, and great store of wine. Assoone as they had taken their repast, GERISMOND (desirous to heare what hard fortune draue them into those bitter extreames) requested ROSADER to discourse, (if it were not anie way prejudiciall vnto him) the cause of his trauell. ROSADER (desirous anie way to satisifie the courtesie of his fauo-
Euphues

faourable host, (first beginning his exordium with a volley of sighes, and a few luke warme teares) prosecuted his discouerse, & told him fro point to point all his fortunes; how he was the yongest Sonne of Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux; his name Rosader, how his brother sundrie times had wronged him, and lastly, how for beating the Sheriffe, and hurting his men, he fled; and this olde man (quoth he) whom I so much love and honour, is surnamed Adam Spencer, an old servant of my fathers, and one (that for his love) never failed me in all my misfortunes. When Gerismond hearde this, hee fell on the necke of Rosader, and next discourting vnsto him, how he was Gerismond their lawfull King exiled by Torismond, what familiaritie had ever been between his father Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux and him, how faithful a subject he liued, and how honourable he died; promising (for his sake) to giue both him and his friend such courteous intertainment, as his present estate could minister: and vpon this made him one of his forresters. Rosader seing it was the King, craude pardon for his boldness, in that he did not doo him due reuerence, and humbly gave him thankes for his faourable courtesie. Gerismond not satified yet with newes, began to enquire if he had been lately in the court of Torismond, and whether he had seene his daughter Rosalynede, or no? At this, Rosader fetched a deep sigh, and shedding manie teares, could not answere: yet at last, gathering his spirites together, hee revealed vnto the King, how Rosalynede was banished, and how there was such a sympathy of affections betweene Alinda and her, that shee chose rather to be partaker of her exile, than to part fellowship: whereupon the unnaturreall King banished them both; and now they are wandred none knowes whether, neither could anie learne since their departure, the place of their abode. This newes drue the King into a great melancholy, that presently he arose from all the companie, and went into his priuie chamber, so secret as the harbor of the woods would allow him. The companie was all daught at these tidings, &

Rosader
golden Legacie.

Rosader and Adam Spencer having such opportunitie, went to take their rest. Where we leaue them, and returne againe to Torismond.

The flight of Rosader came to the eares of Torismond, who hearing that Saladyne was sole heire of the landes of Sir John of Bourdeaux, desirous to possesse such faire reuenewes, found iuft occasion to quarrell with Saladyne, about the wrongs hee proffered to his brother: and therefore dispatching a Herehault, hee sent for Saladyne in all poast haft. Who mervailing what the matter should be, began to examine his owne conscience, wherein he had offended his Highnesse: but inboldened with his innocence, hee boldly went with the Herehault into the Court. Where afoom as hee came, hee was not admitted into the presence of the King, but presently sent to prifon. This greatly amazed Saladyne, chiefly in that the Tayler had a straight charge ouer him, to see that he should be close prifoner. Manie passionate thoughts came in his head, till at last he began to fall into consideration of his former follies, & to meditate with himselfe. Leaning his head on his hand, and his elbowe on his knee, full of sorrow, griefe and disquieted passions, he resolued into these teames.

Saladyne's complaint.

Vnhappie Saladyne, whome folly hath led to these miffortunes, and wanton desires wrapt within the laborinth of these calamities. Are not the heauens doomers of mens deedes? And holdes not God a ballaunce in his fitt, to reward with fauour, and reuenge with iustice? Oh Saladyne, the faults of thy youth, as they were fonde, so were they foule; and not onely discouering little noyture, but blemishing the excellence of nature. Whelps of one lytter are euer most lousing, and brothers that are sones of one father, should live in friendship without iare. Oh Saladyne, so it should bee: but thou haft with the deere fedde a-
Euphues

gainst the winde, with the Crab stroue against the streame, and fought to peruer Nature by vnkindnesse. ROSADERS wrongs, the wrongs of ROSADER (SALADYNE) cries for reuenge, his youth pleades to God to inflict some penance vpon thee, his vertues are pleas that inforce writs of displeasure to crosse thee: thou haft highly abused thy kinde & naturall brother, and the heauens cannot spare to quite thee with punishment. There is no sting to the worme of conscience, no hell to a minde toucht with guilt. Euerie wrong I offered him (called now to remembrance) wringeth a drop of bloud from my heart, euerie bad looke, euerie frowne pincheth me at the quicke, and fayes SALADYNE thou haft find a-gainst ROSADER. Be penitent, and assigne thy selfe some penance to discouer thy forrow, and pacifie his wrath.

In the depth of his passion, he was sent for to the King: who with a looke that threatened death entertained him, and demaunded of him where his brother was? SALADYNE made aunwvere, that vpon some ryot made against the Sheriffe of the shyre, he was fled from Boudeaux, but he knew not whether. Nay villain (quoth he) I haue heard of the wrongs thou haft proffered thy brother since the death of thy father, and by thy meanes haue I lost a most braue and resolute Cheualier. Therefore, in Iustice to punishe thee, I spare thy life for thy fathers sake, but banishe thee for euer from the Court and Countrey of France, and see thy departure bee within tenne dayes, els trust me thou shalt loose thy head, & with that the King flew away in a rage, and left poore SALADYNE greatly perplexed. Who grieving at his exile, yet determined to beare it with patience, and in penance of his former follies to trauell abroade in euerie Coaft, till hee had founde out his Brother ROSADER. With whom now I begin.

ROSADER beeing thus preferred to the place of a Forester by GERISMOND, rooted out the remembrance of his brothers vnkindnes by continual exercize, trauerfing the groues and wilde Forrests: partly to heare the melodie of the sweete birdes
golden Legacie.

birds which recorded, and partly to shew his diligent in-
deavour in his masters behalfe. Yet whatsoever he did, or
howsoever he walked, the lively Image of ROSALYNDE re-
mained in memorie; on her sweete perfection he fedde his
thoughts, proouing himselfe like the Eagle a true borne
bird, since as the one is known by beholding the Sunne:
so was he by regarding excellent beautie. One day among
the rest, finding a fit opportunity and place convenient, de-
ferous to discouer his woes to the woodes, hee engraued with
his knife on the barke of a Myrtle tree, this pretie estimate
of his Mistres perfection.

Sonnetto.

Of all chaste birds the Phænix doth excell,
Of all strong beasts the Lion beares the bell,
Of all sweete flowers the Rose doth sweetest smell,
Of all faire maides my Rosalynde is fairest.

Of all pure mettals golde is onely purest,
Of all high trees the Pine hath highest crest,
Of all soft sweetes I like my Mistres brest,
Of all chaste thoughts my Mistres thoughts are rarest.

Of all proud birds the Ægle pleaseth Ioue,
Of pretie fowles kinde Venus likes the Doue,
Of trees Minerua doth the Oliue loue,
Of all sweete Nimphes I honour Rosalynde.

Of all her gifts her wisedome pleaseth most,
Of all her graces vertue she doth boast:
For all these giftes my life and ioy is lost,
If Rosalynde prove cruell and unkinde.

In these and such like passions, ROSADER did euerie daye
eternize the name of his ROSALYNDE: and this day especial-
lie

H 3
Euphues

lie when Aliena and Ganimede (inforced by the heate of the Sunne to seeke for shelter) by good fortune arrived in that place, where this amorous forrester registred his melancholy passions; they saw the sodaine change of his looks, his folded armes, his passionate sighes; they heard him often abruptly call on Rosalynnde: who (poore soule) was as hotly burned as himselfe, but that she shrouded her paines in the cinders of honorable modestie. Whereupon, (gseeing him to be in lowe, and according to the nature of their sexe, being pitifull in that behalfe) they sodainly brake off his melancholy by their approach: and Ganimede shooke him out of his dumpes thus.

What newes Forrester? hast thou wounded some deere, and loft him in the fall? Care not man for so small a losse, thy fees was but the skinne, the shoulder, and the hornes: tis hunters lucke, to ayme faire and misse: and a woodmans fortune to strike and yet goe without the game.

Thou art beyond the marke Ganimede, quoth Aliena, his passions are greater, and his sighs discouers more losse; perhaps in trauersing these thickets, he hath seen some beautifull Nymph, and is grown amorous. It maye bee fo (quoth Ganimede) for heere he hath newly ingrauen som
sonnet: come and see the discouere of the Forresters poemes. Reading the sonnet ouer, and hearing him name Rosalynnde, Aliena looke on Ganimede and laught, and Ganimede looking backe on the Forrester, and seeing it was Rosader blufht, yet thinking to shroud all vnder his pages apparell, she boldly returned to Rosader, and began thus.

I pray thee tell me Forrester, what is this Rosalynnde, for whom thou pinest away in such passions? Is thee some Nymph that waityes vpon Dianaes traine, whose chastitie thou hast decyphred in such Epethites? Or is thee some shepheardeffe, that haunts these plaines, whose beautie hath so bewitched thy fancie, whose name thou shaduoweft in coquet vnder the figure of Rosalynnde, as Ouid did Iulia vnnder the name of Corinna? Or say mee for sooth, is it that

Rosa-
golden Legacie.

ROSALYNE, of whom we shepheards haue heard talke, shee Forrester, that is the Daughter of GERISMOND, that once was King, and now an Outlaw in this Forrest of Arden. At this ROSADER seth a deepe sigh, and said, It is shee, O gentle swayne, it is shee, that Saint it is whom I serv, that Goddesse at whose shrine I doo bend all my devotion: the most fairest of all faires, the Phenix of all that sexe, and the puritie of all earthly perfection. And why (gentle Forrester) if she bee so beautifull and thou so amorous, is there such a disaffectement in thy thoughts? Happely the resemblance the rose, that is sweete but full of prickles? or the serpent REGIVUS that hath scales as glorious as the Sunne, & a breath as infectious as the Aconitum is deadly? So thy ROSALYNE, may be most amiable, and yet vnkinde: full of fauour, and yet froward: coy without wit, and disdainedfull without reason.

O shepheard (quoth ROSADER) knewest thou her personage graced with the excellence of all perfection, being a harbour wherein the Graces shroude their vertues: thou wouldest not breathe out such blasphemie against the beauteous ROSALYNE. She is a Diamond, bright but not hard, yet of most chast operation: a pearle so orient, that it can be stained with no blemish: a rose without prickles, and a Princesse abolute aswell in beautie, as in vertue. But I, vnhappy I, haue let mine eye soare with the Eagle against so bright a Sunne, that I am quite blinde; I haue with APOLLO enamoured my selfe of a DAPHNE, not (as shee) disdainfull, but farre more chast then DAPHNE; I haue with IXION laide my loue on IUNO, and shall (I feare) embrace nought but a cloud. Ah shepheard, I haue reacht at a star, my desires haue mounted aboue my degree, & my thoughts aboue my fortunes. I being a peasant haue ventred to gaze on a Princesse, whose honors are too high to vouchsafe such base loues.

Why Forrester (quoth GANIMDE) comfort thy selfe: be blythe and frolicke man, Loue fowfeth as low as shee foareth
Euphues

reth high: CUPIDE shootes at a ragge asfoone as at a roabe, and VENUS eye that was so curious sparkled fauor on pole footed VULCAN. Feare not man, womens lookes are not tied to dignities feathers, nor make they curious esteeme, where the stone is found, but what is the vertue. Feare not Forrester, faint heart never wonne faire Ladie. But where liues ROSALYND now, at the Court?

Oh no (quoth ROSADER) she liues I knowe not where, and that is my sorrow; banisht by TORISMOND, and that is my hell: for might I but finde her sacred perfonage, & plead before the barre of her pitie the plaint of my passions, hope tells mee shee would grace me with some fauour; and that woulde suffice as a recompence of all my former miseries. Much haue I heard of thy Miftres excellence, and I know Forrester thou canst describe her at the full, as one that haft suruayd all her parts with a curious eye: then doo me that fauour, to tell mee what her perfections bee. That I will (quoth ROSADER) for I glorie to make all eares wonder at my Miftres excellence. And with that he pulde a paper forth his boisme, wherein he read this.

Rofalyndes description.

Like to the cleere in higest sphære
Where all imperiall glorie shines,
Of selfe same colour is her haire
Whether unfolded or in twines:

Heigh ho faire Rofalynde.

Her eyes are Saphires set in snow,
Refining heauen by euerie winke;
The Gods doo feare when as they glow,
And I doo tremble when I thinke.

Heigh ho, would she were mine.

Her
golden Legacie.

Her cheekes are like the blushing cloude
That beauties Aurorae face,
Or like the siluer crimson shrowde
That Phoebus smiling lookes doth grace:

Heigh ho, faire Rosalynde.

Her lippes are like two budded roses,
Whom rankes of lillies neighbour nie,
Within which bounds she balme incloses,
Apt to intice a Deitie:

Heigh ho, would she were mine.

Her necke like to a slately towre,
Where Loue himselfe imprisoned lies,
To watch for glaunces euerie howre,
From her dewne and sacred eyes,

Heigh ho, faire Rosalynde.

Her pappes are centers of delight,
Her pappes are orbs of heavenlie frame,
Where Nature moldes the dewe of light,
To feede perfection with the same:

Heigh ho, would she were mine.

With orient pearle, with rubie red,
With marble white, with saphire blew,
Her bodie euerie way is fed;
Yet soft in touch, and sweete in view:

Heigh ho, faire Rosalynde.

Nature her selfe her shape admires,
The Gods are wounded in her sight,
And Loue forsakes his heavenly fires,
And at her eyes his brand doth light:

Heigh ho, would she were mine.

Then muse not Nymphes though I bemoane
The absence of faire Rosalynde:

Since
Euphues

Since for her faire there is fairest none,
Nor for her vertues so diverse.
Heigh ho faire Rosalynde:
Heigh ho my heart, would God that she were mine.

Perijt, quia desperibat.

Beléeue me (quoth GANIMEDE) either the Forrester is an exquisite painter, or ROSALYNDE faire above wonder: so it makes me blush, to heare how women should be so excellent, and pages so vurplet.

ROSADER beholding her earnestly, answerd thus. Truely (gentle page) thou hast cause to complaine thee, west thou the substance: but resembling the shadow, content thy selfe: for it is excellence inough to be like the excellence of Nature. He hath aunswered you GANIMEDE (quoth ALIBNA) it is inough for pages to waite on beautifull Ladies, & not to be beautifull themselues. Oh Miftres (quoth GANIMEDE) holde you your peace, for you are partiall: Who knowes not, but that all women haue desire to tie souereinento their peticoats, and acribe beautie to themselues, where if boyes might put on their garments, perhaps they would prooue as comely; if not as comely, it may be more courteous. But tell mee Forrester, (and with that thee turnde to ROSADER) vnder whom maintaineft thou thy walke? Gentle swaine vnder the King of Outlawes faied he, the unfortunate GERISMOND: who hauing loft his kingdome, crownd his thoughts with content, accounting it better to gouern among poore men in peace, than great men in daunger. But haft thou not faid she, (hauing to melancholie opportunities as this Forrest affoordeth thee) written more Sonnets in commendations of thy Mistres? I haue gentle Swanye quoth he, but they be not about me: to morrow by dawne of daye, if your flockes feede in these pastures, I will bring them you: wherein you shall reade my passions, whilst I féele them; judge my patience when you read it: till when
golden Legacie.

I bid farewell. So giuing both GANIMEDE and ALIENA a gentle good night, he resorted to his lodge: leaving ALIENA and GANIMEDE to their prittleprattle. So GANIMEDE (said ALIENA, the Forrester beeing gone) you are mightely beloued, men make ditties in your praise, spend sighes for your sake, make an Idoll of your beautie: beleeue me it greeues mee not a little, to see the poore man so pensiue, and you so pittishe.

Ah ALIENA (quoth she) be not peremptorie in your judgements, I heare ROSALYNDE praisde as I am GANIMEDE, but were I ROSALYNDE, I could answere the Forrester: If hee mourned for loue, there are medicines for loue: ROSALYNDE cannot be faire and vnkinde. And so Madame you see it is time to solde our flockes, or els CORIDON will frowne, and say you will never prove good huswife. With that they put their Sheepe into the coates, and went home to her friend CORIDONS cottage, ALIENA as merry as might be, that she was thus in the companie of her ROSALYNDE: but shee poore soule, that had Loue her load starre, and her thoughts set on fire with the flame of fancie, could take no rest, but being alone beganne to consider what passionate penaunce poore ROSADER was enioyed to by loue and fortune: that at last she fell into this humour with her selfe.

Rosalynde passionate alone.

A H ROSALYNDE, how the Fates haue set downe in their Synode to make thee vnhappie: for when Fortune hath done her wort, then Loue comes in to begin a new tragedie; shee seekes to lodge her fonne in thine eyes, and to kindle her fires in thy boforme. Beware fonde girle, he is an vnruyly guest to harbour; for cutting in by intreats he will not be thrust out by force, and her fires are fed with such fuel, as no water is able to quench. Seest thou not how VENUS seekes to wrap thee in her Laborynth, wherein is pleasure at the entrance, but within, sorrowes, cares, and
Euphues

discontent: she is a Syren, stop thine eares at her melodie; and a Basiliscke, shut thine eyes, and gaze not at her least thou perish. Thou art nowe placed in the Countrey content, where are heauenly thoughts, and meane desires: in those Lawnes where thy flockes feede Diana haunts: bee as her Nymphes, chaste, and enemie to Loue: for there is no greater honour to a Maide, than to accompt of fancie, as a mortall foe to their sexe. Daphne that bonny wench was not tourned into a Bay tree, as the Poets faine: but for her chaftitie her fame was immortall, resembling the Lawrell that is ever greene. Follow thou her steps Rosalynde, and the rather, for that thou art an exile, and banished from the Court: whose distresse, as it is appeased with patience, so it woulde bee renewed with amorous passions. Haue minde on thy forepassed fortunes, feare the worst, and intangle not thy selfe with present fancie: leaft louing in haft thou repent thee at leasure. Ah but yet Rosalynde, it is Rosader that courts thee; one, who as hee is beautifull, so he is vertuous, and harboureth in his minde as manie good qualities, as his face is shadowed with gracious favours: and therefore Rosalynde stopee to Loue, leaft beeing either too coy, or too cruel, Venus waxe wrothe, and plague thee with the reward of disdaine.

Rosalynde thus passionate, was wakened from her dumpes by Aliena, who saide it was time to goe to bedde. Coridon swore that was true, for Charles Wayne was rifen in the North. Whereupon each taking leaue of other, went to their rest all, but the poore Rosalynde: who was so full of passions, that shee coulde not possesse any content. Well, leaung her to her broken slumbers, expect what was perfourmed by them the nexte morning.

The Sunne was no sooner stept from the bed of Aurora, but Aliena was wakened by Ganimede: who restlesse all night had tossed in her passions: saying it was then time to goe to the field to vnfold their sheepe. Aliena (that spied where
golden Legacie.

where the hare was by the hounds, and could see day at a little hole) thought to be pleasant with her GANIMEDE, & therefore replied thus; What wanton? the Sun is but new vp, & as yet IRIS riches lies folded in the bosom of FLORA, PHEBUS hath not dried vp the pearled deaw, & so long CORIDON hath taught me, it is not fit to lead the sheepe abroad: least the deaw being vnwholeome, they get the rot: but now see I the old proverbe true, he is in haft whom the diuel driues, & where loue prickes forward, there is no worfe death than delay. Ah my good page, is there fancie in thine eie, and pas-
fions in thy heart? What, hast thou wrapt loue in thy looks? and set all thy thoughts on fire by affection? I tell thee, it is a flame as hard to be quencht as that of AETNA. But nature must haue her courie,womens eyes haue facultie attrac
tiue like the leat, and retentiue like the diamond: they dallie in the delight of faire obiects, til gazing on the Panthers beau-
tifull skinne, repenting experience tell themhee hath a de-
uouring paunch. Come on (quoth GANIMEDE) this sermon of yours is but a subtlietie to lie still a bed, because either you thinke the morning colde, or els I being gone, you would steale a nappe: this shifte carries no paulme, and therefore vp and away. And for Loue let me alone, Ile whip him a-
way with nettles, and set disdain as a charme to withstend his forces: and therefore looke you to your selfe, be not too bolde, for VENUS can make you bend; nor too coy, for CUPID hath a piercing dart, that will make you cry Peccati. And that is it (quoth ALIENA) that hath rayfed you so early this morning. And with that she flipt on her peticoate, and start vp: and assoone as she had made her readie, and taken her breakfast, away goe these two with their bagge and bottles to the field, in more pleasant content of mind, than euer they were in the Court of TORISMOND. They came no sooner nigh the foldes, but they might see where their discontented Forrester was walking in his melancholy. Assoone as ALIENA saw him, she smiled, and said to GANIMEDE; wipe your eyes sweeting: for yonder is your sweet hart this morning

I
Euphuies

in deep praise no doubt to Venus, that she may make you as pitiful as he is passionate. Come on Ganimede, I pray thee let have a little sport with him. Content (quoth Ganimede) and with that, to waken him out of his deep remembrand, he began thus.

Forrester, good fortune to thy thoughts, and ease to thy passions, what makes you so early abroad this morn, in contemplation, no doubt of your Rosalynde. Take heed Forrester, step not too far, the word may be deep, and you slip over the shoes: I tell thee, flies have their spleen, the ants clobber, the least hairs shadowes, & the smallest loves great desires. Tis good (Forrester) to love, but not to overlove: least in loving her that likes not thee, thou fold thy self in an endless Laborynth. Rosader seeing the faire shepheardsesse and her pretie swayne, in whose company he hee felt the greatest ease of his care, he returned them a salute in this manner.

Gente shepeheards, all haile, and as healthfull bee your fockes, as you happy in content. Loue is restless, and my bedde is but the cell of my bane, in that there I finde busie thoughtes and broken slumbers: heere (although euerie where passionate) yet I brooke loue with more patience, in that euerie obiect feedes mine eye with varietie of fantasies; when I looke on Floraes beauteous tapestrie, chekered with the pride of all her treasure, I call to minde the faire face of Rosalynde, whose heavenly hiew exceedes the Rose and the Lilly in their highest excellence; the brightness of Phoebus shine, puts me in minde to thinke of the sparkling flames that flew from her eies, and set my heart first on fire; the sweet harmeone of the birds, puts me in remembrand of the rare melodie of her voyce, which like the Syren enchauntest the eares of the hearer. Thus in contemplation I value my sorrowes, with applying the perfection of euerie obiect to the excellence of her qualities.

She is much beholding vnto you (quoth Aliena) and so much, that I haue oft witht with my selfe, that if I shoulde euer
golden Legacie.

uer prooue as amorous as OENONE, I might finde as faith-
full a PARIS as your selfe.

How say you by this Item Forster, (quoth GANIMEDE) the faire shepheardesse fauours you, who is mistresse of so
manie flockes. Leaue of man the supposition of ROSALYNDS loue, when as watching at her, you roue beyond the Moone;
and cast your lookes vpon my Mistres, who no doubt is as
faire though not so royall; one birde in the hande is woorth
two in the wood; better possesse the loue of ALIENA, than
catch fruooously at the shadow of ROSALYNDE.

Ile tell thee boy (quoth GANIMEDE) so is my fancie fixed
ed on my ROSALYNDE, that were thy Mistres as faire as LÆ-
DÀ or DANAE, whome IOUE courted in transforrm'd shapes,
mime eyes would not vouch to intertaine their beauties: and
so hath Loue lockt mee in her perfections, that I had rather
onely contemple in her beauties, than absoolutely possesse
the excellence of anie other. VENUS is too blame (Forre-
stre) if having so true a servant of you, the reward you not
with ROSALYNDE, if ROSALYNDE were more fairer than her
selfe. But leaving this prattle, nowe Ile put you in
minder of your promise, about those sonnets which you saide
were at home in your lodge. I haue them about me (quoth
ROSADER) let vs sit downe, and then you shall heare what a
Poeitical furie Loue will infuse into a man: with that they
state downe vpon a greenne bank, shadowed with figge trees,
and ROSADER, fetching a deepe sigh read them this Son-
net.

Rosaders Sonnet.

In sorrowes cell I laid me downe to sleepe:
But waking woes were jealous of mine eyes,
They made them watch, and bend themselves to weep:
But weeping teares their want could not suffice:
    Yet since for her they wept who guideth my hart,
    They weeping smile, and triumph in their smert.

Of
Euphues

Of these my teares a fountaine fiercely springs,
Where Venus baynes her selfe incensit with loue;
Where Cupid bowseth his faire feathered wings:
But I behold what paines I must approve.
    Care drinkes it drie: but when on her s thinke,
    Loue makes me weepe it full unto the brinke.

Meane while my sighes yeeld truce unto my teares,
By them the windes increast and fiercely blow:
    Yet when they sigh the flame more plaine appeares,
And by their force with greater power doth glow:
    Amids these paines, all Phoenix like I thrive,
    Since Loue that yeelds me death, may life reviue.

Rofader en esperance.

Now surely Forrester (quoth ALIENA) when thou madest
this sonnet, thou wert in some amorous quandarie, neither
too fearfull, as despairing of thy Mistres fauours: nor too
gleesome, as hoping in thy fortunes. I can smile (quoth
GANIMEDE) at the Sonettoes, Canzones, Madrigales,
rounds and roundelayes, that these penfiue patients powre
out, when their eyes are more ful of wantonnesse, than their
hearts of passions. Then, as the fisbers put the sweeteft
baite to the fairest fisht: so these OUIDIANS (holding Amo
in their tongues, when their thoughtes come at hap hazarde,
write that they be wrapt in an endless laborynh of sorrow,
when walking in the large leas of libertie, they onely haue
their humours in their inkpot. If they finde women so
fond, that they will with such painted lures come to theyr
lust, then they triumph till they be full gorgde with plea-
itures: and then fly they away (like ramage kytes) to their
owne content, leauing the tame foole their Mistres full of
fancie, yet without euer a feather. If they misse (as dealing
with some wary wanton, that wats not such as them-
selfes, but spies their subtiltie) they ende their amors with
a few
golden Legacie.

a few fained sighes: and so there excuse is, their Miftres is cruell, and they smoother passions with patience. Such gentle Forrester we may deeme you to bee, that rather passe a-way the time here in these Woods with writing amorets, than to bee deepeely enamoured (as you saye) of your ROSALYNDE. If you bee such a one, then I pray God, when you thinke your fortunes at the higheft, and your desires to bee most excellent, then that you may with IXION embrace IUNO in a clowde, and haue nothing but a marble Miftres to releafe your martyrdom: but if you be true and truftie, ey-paind and hart sicke, then accursed bee ROSALYNDE if shee prooue cruel: for Forrester (I flatter not) thou art woorthie of as faire as shee. ALIENA spying the storme by the winde, smiled to see how GANIMEDE flew to the sight without anie call: but ROSADER who tooke him flat for a shepheards Swayne made him this anfwere.

Truft me Swayne (quoth ROSADER) but my Canzon was written in no such humour: for mine eye & my heart are relatues, the one drawing fancie by sight, the other entertaining her by sorrowe. If thou sawest my ROSALYNDE, with what beauties Nature hath favoured her, with what perfection the heauens hath graced her, with what qualities the Gods haue endued her; then wouldst thou say, there is none so fickle that could be fleeting vnto her. If she had ben ARNEAS DIDO, had VENUS and IUNO both scolded him from Carthage, yet her excellence despite of them, woulde haue detained him at Tyre. If PHILLIS had been as beauteous, or ARIADNE as vertuous, or both as honourable and excellent as she; neither had the Philbert tree forrowed in the death of despairing PHILLIS, nor the starres haue been graced with ARIADNE: but DEMOPHOON and THESEUS had been truffie to their Paragons. I will tell thee Swaine, if with a deepe insignt thou couldst pearce into the secrete of my loues, and see what deepe impressions of her IDEA affection hath made in my heart: then wouldst thou conffe I were passing passionate, and no leffe indued with admirable patience. Why

K (quoth
Euphues

(quoth ALIENA) needes there patience in Loue? Or els in nothing (quoth ROSADER) for it is a restless soare, that hath no ease, a canker that still frets, a disease that taketh away all hope of sleepe. If then so manie sorrowes, sodain ioyes, momentarie pleasures, continuall feares, daylie griefes, and nightly woes be found in Loue, then is not he to be accompted patient, that smoothers all these passions with silence? Thou speakest by experience (quoth GANIMEDE) and therefore wee holde all thy words for Axiomes: but is Loue such a lingering maladie? It is (quoth he) either extreme or meane, according to the minde of the partie that entertaines it: for as the weedes growe longer vntouche than the pretie flowers, and the flint lies safe in the quarrie, when the Emeraulde is suffering the Lapidaries toole: so meane men are freed from VENUS injurys, when kings are enuyroned with a laborynth of her cares. The whiter the Lawne is, the deeper is the moale, the more purer the chrysolite the sooner stained; and such as haue their hearts ful of honour, haue their loues full of the greatest sorrowes. But in whomsoever (quoth ROSADER) he fixeth his dart, bee never leaueth to assualt him, till either bee hath wonne him to sallie or fancie: for as the Moone never goes without the starre LUNISEQUA, so a Louer never goeth without the vnrest of his thoughts. For profe you shall heare another fancie of my making. Now doo gentle Forrestor (quoth GANIMEDE) and with that he read ouer this Sonetto.

Rofaders seconnd Sonetto.

Turne I my lookes unto the Skies,
Loue with his arrows wounds mine eies:
If so I gaze upon the ground,
Loue then in euerye flower is found.

Search
golden Legacie.

Search I the shade to fly my paine,
He meetes me in the shade againe:
Wend I to walke in secret grove,
Euen there I meete with sacred Love.
If so I bayne me in the spring,
Euen on the brink I heare him sing:
If so I meditate alone,
He will be partner of my moane.
If so I mourn, he weepes with mee,
And where I am, there will he bee.
When as I talke of Rosalynde,
The God from coyneffe waxeth kinde,
And seemes in selfe same flames to frie,
Because he loves as well as I.
Sweete Rosalynde for pitie sue,
For why, then Loue I am more true:
He if he speed will quicklie flie,
But in thy loue I live and die.

How like you this Sonnet, quoth ROSADER? Marrie quoth GANIMEDE, for the penne well, for the passion ill: for as I praiseth the one; I pitie the other, in that thou shouldest hunt after a clowne, and loue either without rewarde or regard: Tis not her frowardnesse, quoth ROSADER, but my hard fortunes, whose Deftenies haue crost me with her absence: for did thee seele my loues, she would not let me linger in these sorrowes. Women, as they are faire, so they respect faith, and esteeme more (if they be honourable) the will than the wealth, hauing loyalty the object whereat they ayme their fancyes. But leauing off these interparleyes, you shall heare my last Sonnetto, and then you haue heard all my Poetrie: and with that he fight out this.
Euphues

Rofaders third Sonnet.

**Of vertuous Loue my selfe may boast alone,**
*Since no suspic my servise may attaint:*
*For perfeft faire fhee is the onely one,*
*Whom I esteeme for my beloved Saint:*
  *Thus for my faith f she onely beare the bell,*
  *And for her faire fhe onely doth excell.*

Then let fond Petrarch shrowde his Lawraes praise,
*And Talfo ceafe to publijh his affect;*
*Since mine the faith confirmde at all assaies,*
*And hers the faire, which all men doo respect:*
  *My lines her faire, her faire my faith assures;*
  *Thus f by Loue, and Loue by me endures.*

Thus quoth ROSADER, heere is an ende of my Poems,
but for all this no release of my passions: so that I resem-
ble him, that in the deapth of his distresse hath none but the
Eccho to aunswere him. GANIMEDE pittyng her ROSA-
der, thinking to driue him out of this amoroues melancho-
lie, said, that now the Sunne was in his Meridionall heat,
and that it was high noone, therefore we shepheards say, tis
time to goe to dinner: for the Sunne and our stomackes,
are Shepheards dialls. Therefore Forrester, if thou wilt
take such fare as comes out of our homely scrippes, wel-
come shal aunswere whatfoeuer thou wantst in delicates.
ALIENA tooke the entertainment by the ende, and told RO-
sader he shoule be her guest. He thankt them heartely, and
fate with them downe to dinner: where they had such cates
as Countrey fstate did allow them, sawft with such content,
and such sweete prattle, as it seemed farre more sweete, than
all their Courtly iunckets.

Asfoone as they had taken their repaft, ROSADER giuing
them thankes for his good cheere, would haue been gone:
  *but*
golden Legacie.

but GANIMEDE, that was loath to let him passe out of her presence, began thus; Nay Forrester quoth he, if thy busines be not the greater, seeing thou faist thou art so deeply in loue, let me see how thou canst wooe: I will represent ROSALYNDE, and thou shalt bee as thou art ROSADER; see in some amorous Eglogue, how if ROSALYNDE were present, how thou couldst court her: and while we sing of Loue, ALIENA shall tune her pipe, and playe vs melodie. Content, quoth ROSADER. And ALIENA, shee to shew her willingnesse, drewe forth a recorder, and began to winde it. Then the louing Forrester began thus.

The wooing Eglogue betwixt Rosalynde and Rosader.

Rosader.

If pray thee Nymph by all the working words,
By all the teares and sighes that Louers know,
Or what or thoughts or faltring tongue affords,
If craue for mine in ripping vp my woe.
Sweete Rosalynde my loue (would God my loue)
My life (would God my life) ay pitie me;
Thy lips are kinde, and humble like the dove,
And but with beautie pitie will not be.
Looke on mine eyes made red with rufull teares,
From whence the raine of true remorfe descendeth,
All pale in lookes, and I though young in yeares,
And nought but loue or death my daies befrendeth.
Oh let no stormie rigour knit thy broues,
Which Loue appointed for his mercie seate:
The tallest tree by Boreas breath it bowes,
The yron yeelds with hammer, and to heate.
Oh Rosalynde then be thou pittifull,
For Rosalynde is onely beautifull.
Euphues

Rosalynne.

Loues wantons arme their traitrous futes with teares,
With vowes, with oathes, with lookees, with showers of golde:
But when the fruite of their affeects appears,
The simple heart by subtill sleights is solde.
Thus fukes the yeilding care the poifoned bait,
Thus feedes the hart upon his endelesse harmes,
Thus glut the thoughts themselfes on selfe deceit,
Thus blinde the eyes their fight by subtill charmes.
The lovely lookes, the fighs that forme so sure,
The deawe of deepe dissemblerd doublenesse:
These may attempt, but are of power no more,
Where beautie leanes to wit and soothfastnesse.
Oh Rosader then be thou wittifull,
For Rosalynnde scornes foolish pityfull.

Rosader.

If pray thee Rosalynnde by those sweete eyes
That paine the Sunne in shine, the morne in cleare;
By those sweete cheekees where Loue incamped lies
To kisse the roses of the springing yeare.
If tempt thee Rosalynnde by ruthfull plaints,
Not seasoned with deceit or fraudfull guile,
But firme in paine, farre more than tongue depoints,
Sweete Nymph be kinde, and grace me with a smile.
So may the heavens preferre from hurtfull food
Thy harmesleffe flockes, so may the Summer yeild
The pride of all her riches and her good,
To fat thy sheepe (the Citizens of field).
Oh leaue to arme thy lovely browes with scorne:
The birds their beake, the Lion hath his taile,
And Louers nought but fighes and bitter mourn.
The spotlesse fort of fancie to assaile.
Oh Rosalynnde then be thou pityfull:
For Rosalynnde is onely beautifull.
golden Legacie.

Rosafynde.
The hardned steele by fire is brought in frame:
    Rosafynder.
And Rosafynde my loue than amie wooll more softer;
And shall not sighes her tender heart inflame?
    Rosafynde.
Were Louers true, maides would beleue them ofter.
    Rosafynder.
Truth and regard, and honour guide my loue.
    Rosafynde.
Faine would I trust, but yet I dare not trie.
    Rosafynder.
Oh pitie me sweete Nymph, and doo but prove.
    Rosafynde.
I would refist, but yet I know not why.
    Rosafynder.
Oh Rosafynde be kinde, for times will change,
Thy lookes ay will be faire as now they be,
Thine age from beautie may thy lookes estrange:
Ah yeld in time sweete Nymph, and pitie me.
    Rosafynde.
Oh Rosafynde thou must be pitifull.
For Rosafynder is yong and beautifull.

    Rosafynder.
Oh gaine more great than kingdoms, or a crowne.
    Rosafynde.
Oh trust becloud if Rosafyder abuse me.
    Rosafynder.
First let the heavens conspire to pull me downe,
And heaven and earth as abie? quite refuse me.
Let sorrowes streame about my hatefull bower,
And restlesse horror hatch within my breast,
Let beauties eye afflict me with a loure,
Let deere despaire pursuie me without rest;
Euphues

Ere Rosalynde my loyaltie disprooue,
Ere Rosalynde accuse me for vnkinde.
Rosalynde.

Then Rosalynde will grace thee with her love,
Then Rosalynde will haue thee still in minde.
Rosader.

Then let me triumph more than Tithons deere,
Since Rosalynde will Rosader respect:
Then let my face exile his forrie cheere,
And frolick in the comfort of affect:
And say that Rosalynde is onely pityfull,
Since Rosalynde is onely beautifull.

When thus they had finisht their courting Eglogue in such a familiar clausel, GANIMED as Augure of some good fortunes to light vpon their affections, beganne to be thus pleasant; How now Forrester, haue I not fitted your turn? haue I not plaide the woman handomely, and shewed my selfe as coy in graunts, as courteous in desires, and been as full of fuipition, as men of flatterie. And yet to saue all, iumpt I not all vp with the sweete vnion of loue? Did not ROSALYNDE content her ROSADER? The Forrester at this smiling, shooke his head, and folding his armes made this merrie replie.

Truth gentle Swaine, ROSADER hath his ROSALYNDE: but as IXION had IUNO, who thinking to posseffe a goddesse, onely imbred a clowde: in these imaginarie fruitions of fancie, I resemble the birds that fed themselfes with ZEUXIS painted grapes; but they grewe so leane with pecking at shaddowes, that they were glad with AESOPS Cocke to scape for a barley cornell: so faireth it with me, who to feede my selfe with the hope of my Mistres fauours, sooth my self in thy futes, and onely in conceipt reape a wished for content: but if my food be no better than such amorous dreames, VENUS at the yeares ende, shall finde mee but a leane louter. Yet doo I take these follies for high fortunes, and hope these fained
fained affections doo deveine some vnfained ende of enuing
fancies. And thereupon (quoth ALIENA) Ile play the priest,
from this day forth GANIMEDE shall call thee husband, and
thou shalt call GANIMEDE wife, and so wéele have a marriage.
Content (quoth ROSADER) and laught. Content (quoth
GANIMEDE) and changed as redde as a rofe: and so with a
smile and a blush, they made vp this iefting match, that af-
ter prooude to a marriage in earneft; ROSADER full little
thinking he had wooed and wonne his ROSALYNDE. But all
was well, hope is a sweete string to harpe on: and therefore
let the Forrester a while shape himselfe to his shaddow, and
tarrie Fortunes leasure, till she may make a Metamorpho-
phis fit for his purpose. I digresse, and therefore to ALIENA:
who said, the wedding was not worth a pinne, vnles there
were some cheere, nor that bargaine well made that was
not striken vp with a cuppe of wine: and therefore she wild
GANIMEDE to set out such cates as they had, and to drawe
out her bottle, charging the Forrester as hee had imagined
his loues, so to conceipt these cates to be a most sumptuous
banquet, and to take a Mazer of wine and to drinke to his
ROSALYNDE: which ROSADER did; and so they passed awaye
the day in manie pleasent deuices. Till at last ALIENA per-
ceiued time would tarrie no man, and that the Sunne wax-
ed verie lowe, readie to set: which made her shorten their a-
morous prattle, and ende the Banquet with a fresh Car-
rowle; which done, they all three rose, and ALIENA broke
off thus.

Now Forrester, PHŒBUS that all this while hath been
partaker of our sports; seeing euerie Woodman more for-
tunate in his loues, than hee in his fancies; seeing thou haft
wonne ROSALYNDE, when he could not wooe DAPHNE, hides
his head for shame, and bids vs adiew in a clowde; our shee-
ph they poore wantons wander towards their foldes, as taught
by Nature their due times of rest: which tells vs Forrester,
we must depart. Marrie, though there were a marriage,
yet I must carrie (this night) the Bryde with me, and to
mor-
Euphues

morrow morning if you meete vs heere, Ile promise to de-
liuer her as good a maide as I finde her. Content quoth RO-
SADER, tis enough for me in the night to dreame on loue, that
in the day am so fond to doate on loue: and so till to morrow
you to your Foldes, and I will to my Lodge; and thus the
Forrestre and they parted. He was no sooner gone, but A-
LIENA and GANIMEDE went and folded their flockes, and ta-
ting vp their hookes, their bagges, and their bottles, hied
homeward. By the waye, ALIENA to make the time seeme
short, began to prattle with GANIMEDE thus; I haue heard
them say, that what the Fates forepoint, that Fortune pric-
keth downe with a period, that the starres are sticklers in
VENUS Court, and desire hangs at the heele of Deftenie;
if it be so, then by all probable conicetures, this match will
be a marriage: for if Augurisme be authenticall, or the de-
quines doomes principles, it cannot bee but such a shaddowe
portends the issue of a substaunce, for to that ende did the
Gods force the conceit of this Eglogue, that they might
discouer the ensuing consent of your affections: so that
eare it bee long, I hope (in earneft) to danunce at your
Wedding.

Tufh (quoth GANIMEDE) al is not malte that is cast on
the kill, there goes more words to a bargaine than one, loue
feele no footing in the aire, and fancie holdes it slipperie
harbour to nestle in the tongue: the match is not yet so fure-
ly made but he may miffe of his market; but if Fortune be
his friend, I will not be his foe: and so I pray you (gentle
Mistrefse ALIENA) take it. I take all things well (quoth
thee) that is your content, and am glad ROSADER is yours:
for now I hope your thoughts will be at quiet; your eye that
euer looked at Loue, will nowe lende a glaunce on your
Lambes: and then they will prowe more buxsome and you
more blythe, for the eyes of the Master feedes the Cattle.
As thus they were in chat, they spied olde CORIDON where
hee came plodding to meete them: who tolde them supper
was readie: which newes made them speede them home.

Where
golden Legacie. 38

Where we leaue them to the next morrow, and returne to Saladyne.

All this while did poore Saladyne (banished from Bourdeaux and the Court of France by Torismond) wander vp and downe in the Forrest of Arden, thinking to get to Lions, and so trauell through Germanie into Italy: but the Forrest being full of by-pathes, and he vnskilfull of the Countrey coast, flipt out of the way, and chaunce vp into the Defart, not farre from the place where Gerismond was, and his brother Rosader. Saladyne wearie with wandering vp and downe, and hungrie with long faisting; finding a little cause by the side of a thicket, eating such frute as the Forrest did afford, and contenting himselfe with such drinke as Nature had prouided, and thirst made delicate, after his repast he fell in a dead sleepe. As thus he lay, a hungrie Lion came hunting downe the edge of the groue for pray, and espying Saladyne began to ceaze vpon him: but seeing he lay still without anie motion, he left to touch him, for that Lions hate to pray on dead carkasses: and yet desirous to haue some foode, the Lion lay downe and watcht to see if hee would sitire. While thus Saladyne slept secure, fortune that was careful ouer her champion, began to smile, and brought it so to passe, that Rosader (hauing striken a Deere that but lightly hurt fled through the thicket) came pacing downe by the groue with a Boare speare in his hand in great haft, he spied where a man lay a sleepe, and a Lion faft by him: amazed at this sight, as hee stood gazing, his nose on the sodaine bled; which made him coniecture it was some friend of his. Whereupon drawing more nigh, hee might easely discerne his vifage, and perceiued by his phisnomie that it was his brother Saladyne: which draue Rosader into a deepe passion, as a man perplexed at the sight of fo vnexpected a chaunce, maruelling what shoulde driue his brother to trauere tho secrete Defarts without anie companie in such distresse and forlorne fort. But the present time craued no such doubting ambages: for either he must

L 2 resolue

83
Euphues

resolue to hazard his life for his reliefe, or els steale awaye,
and leaue him to the crueltie of the Lion. In which doubt,
he thus briefly debated with himselfe.

Rofaders meditation.

Now ROSADER, Fortune that long hath whipt thee
with nettles, meanes to salue thee with roses; and
hauing crost thee with manie frownes, now she pre-
sents thee with the brightnesse of her favours. Thou that
didst count thy selfe the most distressefell of all men, maist ac-
compt thy selfe now the most fortunate amongst men; if for-
tune can make men happie, or sweete reuenge be wrapt in a
pleasing content. Thou seest SALADYNE thine enemie, the
worker of thy misfortunes, and the efficient cause of thine
exile, subiect to the crueltie of a mercifull Lion: brought
into this miserie by the Gods, that they might seeme iust in
reuenging his rigour, and thy injuries. Seest thou not how
the starres are in a fauourable aspect, the plannets in some
pleasing coniunction, the fates agreeable to thy thoughtes,
and the destenies perfourmers of thy desires, in that SALA-
DYNE shall die, and thou free of his bloud; he receive meede
for his amisfe, and thou erect his tombe with innocent
hands. Now ROSADER shalt thou returne to Bourdeaux,
and enjoye thy possessions by birth, and his reuenance by
inheritaunce: now maist thou triumph in loue, and hang
Fortunes Altares with garlandes. For when ROSALYNDE
heares of thy wealth, it will make her loue thee more will-
ingly: for womens eyes are made of Chrisecoll, that is e-
euer vnperfect vnlesse tempred with golde: and JUPITER foo-
neesf enioyed DANAË, because he came to her in so rich a shoo-
er. Thus shall this Lion (ROSADER) end the life of a mi-
serable man, and from distresse raise thee to bee most for-
tunate. And with that casting his Boare speare on his neck,
away he began to trudge. But hee had not stopt backe two
or
golden Legacie.

or threè paces, but a new motion stroke him to the very hart, that resting his Boare speare against his breast, hee fell into this passionate humour.

Ah ROSADER, wert thou the sonne of Sir IOHN of Bour-deaux, whose vertues exceeded his valour, and yet the most hardieft Knight in all Europe? Should the honour of the father shine in the actions of the sonne? and wilt thou dishonour thy parentage, in forgetting the nature of a Gentleman? Did not thy father at his laft gaspe breathe out this golden principle; Brothers amitie is like the drops of Balsamum, that falseth the most dangerous foes? Did hee make a large exhort unto concord, and wilt thou shewe thy selfe careless? Oh ROSADER, what though SADADYNE hath wronged thee, and made thee liue an exile in the Forrest? shall thy nature be so cruell, or thy nurture so crooked, or thy thoughts so fauage, as to suffer so dismal a revenge? what, to let him be devoured by wilde beasts? Non sapis, qui non sibi sapit is fondly spoken in such bitter extremes. Loofe not his life ROSADER to winne a world of treasure: for in hausing him thou haft a brother, and by hazarding for his life, thou gettest a friend, and reconcilest an enemie: and more honour shalt thou purchase by pleasing a foe, than reuenging a thoufand injuries.

With that his Brother began to stirre, and the Lion to rowse himselfe: whereupon ROSADER sodainely charged him with the Boare speare, and wounded the Lion verie fore at the firft stroake. The beast feeling himselfe to have a mortall hurt, leapt at ROSADER, and with his paws gave him a fore pinch on the breast that he had almost falkn: yet as a man most valiant, in whom the sparkes of Sir IOHN of Bour-deaux remained, he recovered himselfe, and in shoutrt combat flew the Lion: who at his death roared fo lowde, that SALADYNE awaked, and starting vp was amased at the sodayne sight of fo monstrous a beast lie slaine by him, and fo sweete a Gentleman wounded. He presently (as hee was of a ripe conceipt) began to coniecture, that the Gentleman had slaine

L 3

him
Euphues

him in his defence. Whereupon (as a man in a trounce) he stood staring on them both a good while, not knowing his Brother beeinge in that disguife: at laft hee burst into these tearmes.

Sir what foeuer thou bee, (as full of honour thou must needs be, by the view of thy present valure) I perceiue thou haft redrest my fortunes by thy courage, and faued my life with thine owne losse: which ties me to be thine in all humble service. Thanks thou shalt haue as thy due, and more thou canst not haue: for my abilitie denies to perforeme a deeper debt. But if anie wayes it please thee to command me, vfe me as farre as the power of a poore Gentleman may stretch.

ROSAIDER seeing hee was vnknowne to his brother, wondered to heare such courteous words come from his crabbed nature; but glad of such reformed noyture, hee made this aunfwere. I am sir (what foeuer thou art) a Forrefter and Ranger of these walkes: who following my Deere to the fall, was conductd hether by some assenting Fate, that I might saue thee, and disparage my felfe. For comming into this place, I fawe thee a sleepe, and the Lion watching thy awake, that at thy rising hee might prey vpon thy carkeffe. At the first sight, I construed thee a Gentleman, (for all mens thoughts ought to be fauourable in imagination) and I counted it the hart of a resolute man to purchase a strangers reliefe, though with the losse of his owne bloud: which I haue perfourmed (thou seest) to mine owne prejudice. If therefore thou be a man of such worth as I valew thee by thy exteriour linaments, make discoure vnto mee what is the cause of thy present fortunes. For by the furrowes in thy face thou seemest to be croft with her frowns: but what foeuer or how foeuer, let me craue that fauour, to heare the tragick cause of thy estate. SALADYNE sitting downe, and fetching a deepe sigh, began thus.

Sala-
Saladyne's discourse to Rosader unknowen.

Although the discourse of my fortunes, be the renewing of my sorrowes, and the rubbing of the scar, will open a fresh wound; yet that I may not prove ingratefull to so courteous a Gentleman, I will rather sitte downe and sigh out my estate, than give anie offence by smoothering my grief with silence. Know therefore (sir) that I am of Bourdeaux, and the sonne and heire of Syr John of Bourdeaux, a man for his vertues and valour so famous, that I cannot thinke, but the fame of his honours, hath reacht farther than the knowledge of his Personage. The infortunate sonne of so fortunate a Knight am I, my name SALADYNE: Who succeeding my Father in possession but not in qualities, hauing two Brethren committed by my Father at his death to my charge, with such golden principles of brotherly concord, as might haue pierct like the SYRENS melodie into anie humane eare. But I (with VLYSSES became deafe against his Philosophicall harmony, and made more value of profite than of vertue, esteeming golde sufficient honour, and wealth the fittest title for a gentlemans dignitie: I set my middle brother to the Vniuerfitie to be a Scholler, counting it enough if he might pore on a booke, while I fed vpon his reuenues: and for the yonger (which was my fathers ioye) yong ROSADER. And with that, naming of ROSADER, SALADYNE sent him downe and wept.

Nay forward man (quoth the Forrester) teares are the vnfittest value that anie man can applie for to cure sorrowes, and therefore cease from such feminine follies, as shoulde droppe out of a Womans eye to deceiue, not out of a Gentlemans looke to discouer his thoughts, and forward with thy discourse.

Oh
Euphues

Oh sir (quoth Saladyne) this Rosader that wringes teares from mine eyes, and bloud from my heart, was like my father in exteriour personage and in inward qualities: for in the prime of his yeares he aimed all his acts at honor, and coueted rather to die, than to brooke anie injurie unwor-thie a Gentlemans credite. I, whom enuie had made blinde, and couetousnesse masked with the vaile of selfe loue, seeing the Palme tree grow straight, thought to suppressse it being a twig: but Nature will haue her courfe, the Cedar will be tall, the Diamond bright, the Carbuncle glistering, and vertue will shine though it be never so much obscured. For I kept Rosader as a flane, and vised him as one of my sereile hindes, vntil age grew on, and a secreet insight of my abuse entred into his minde: infomuch, that hee could not brooke it, but coueted to haue what his father left him, and to liue of himselfe. To be short sir, I repined at his fortunes, and he countercheckt me not with abilitie but valour, vntill at last by my friends and aid of such as followed golde more than right or vertue, I banisht him from Bourdeaux, and he pore Gentleman liues no man knowes where in some distresse d discontent. The Gods not able to suffer such impietie vn-reuenged, so wrought, that the King pickt a caufeles quarrell against me, in hope to haue my lands, and so hath exiled me out of France for euer. Thus, thus sir, am I the most miserable of all men, as haung a blemish in my thoughtes for the wrongs I proffered Rosader, and a touche in my state to be thrown from my proper possesions by injustice. Passionate thus with manie griefes, in penaunce of my former follies, I goe thus pilgrime like to seeke out my Brother, that I may reconcile my selfe to him in all submission, and afterward wend to the holy Land, to ende my yeares in as manie vertues, as I haue spent my youth in wicked va-nities.

Rosader hearing the resolution of his brother Saladyne began to compasionate his sorrowes, and not able to smo-ther the sparkes of Nature with fained secrecie, he burst in-
golden Legacie.

to these louing speaches. Then know Saladyne (quoth he) that thou haft met with Rosader; who grieues as much to see thy distresse, as thy selfe to feele the burden of thy miserie. Saladyne cauting vp his eye, and noting well the phifnomie of the Forrester, knew that it was his brother Rosader: which made him so bash and blufh at the first meeting, that Rosader was faine to recomfort him. Which he did in such fort, ye he shewed how highly he held reuenge in scorne. Much a doo there was betwene these two Brethren, Saladyne in crauing pardon, and Rosader in forgiving and forgetting all former injuries; the one submiff, the other curteous; Saladyne penitent and passionate, Rosader kinde & louing; that at length Nature working an union of their thoughts, they earnestly embraced, and fell from matters of vnkindnesse, to talke of the Countrey life, which Rosader fo highly commended, that his brother began to have a desire to taste of that homely content. In this humour Rosader conduced him to Gerismonds Lodge, and preffented his brother to the King: discoursing the whole matter how all had happened betwixt them. The King looking vpon Saladyne, found him a man of a moft beautifull personage, and saw in his face sufficient sparkes of ensuinghonours, gaue him great entertainment, and glad of their friendly reconcilement, promifed such fauour as the pouerite of his eftate might affoord: which Saladyne gratefully accepted. And fo Gerismond fell to question of Torismonds life? Saladyne briefly discoursed unto him his injuicte and tyrannies: with such modestie (although hee had wronged him) that Gerismond greatly praised the sparing speach of the yong Gentleman.

Manie questions past, but at laft Gerismond began with a deepe sigh, to inquire if there were anie newes of the welfare of Alinda or his daughter Rosalynde? None sir quoth Saladyne, for since their departure they were neuer heard of. Injurious Fortune (quoth the King) that to double the Fathers miserie, wrongft the Daughter with misfortunes. And
Euphues

And with that (surcharged with sorrowes) he went into his Cel, & left Saladyne and Rosader, whom Rosader freight conducted to the sight of Adam Spencer. Who seeing Saladyne in that estate, was in a browne studie: but when hee heard the whole matter, although he grieved for the exile of his Master, yet hee joyed that banishment had so reformed him, that from a lascivious youth hee was prooued a vertuous Gentleman. Looking a longer while, and seeing what familiaritie past betweene them, and what favours were interchanged with brotherly affection, he said thus; I marrie, thus shoulde it be, this was the concord that olde Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux wisseth betwixt you. Now fulfill you those precepts he breathed out at his death, and in obseruing them, looke to liue fortunate, and die honourable. Wel said Adam Spencer quoth Rosader, but haft anie victuals in store for vs? A pece of a red Deere (quoth he) and a bottle of wine. Tis Forresteres fare brother, quoth Rosader: and so they fate downe and fell to their cates. Asioone as they had taken their repast, and had well dined, Rosader tooke his brother Saladyne by the hand, and shewed him the pleasures of the Forrest, and what content they enjoyed in that meanes estate. Thus for two or three dayes he walked vp and down with his brother, to shewe him all the commodities that belonged to his Walke. In which time hee was mist of his Ganimede, who mused greatly (with Aliena) what should become of their Forefter. Some while they thought he had taken some word vnkindly, and had taken the pet: then they imagined some new loue had withdrawn his fancie, or happily that he was sicke, or detained by some great businesse of Gerismonds, or that he had made a reconcilement with his brother, and so returned to Bourdeaux. These coniectures did they cast in their heads, but especially Ganimede: who hauing Loue in her heart prooued restlesse, and halfe without patience, that Rosader wronged hir with so long absence: for Loue measurest euery minute, and thinkes howers to be dayes, and dayes to be months, till they feed their eyes
golden Legacie.

eyes with the sight of their desired object. Thus perplexed liued poore GANIMEDE: while on a day fitting with ALIENA in a great dumpe, she cast vp her eye, and saw where ROSADER came pacing towards them with his forest bill on his necke. At that sight her colour change, and she said to ALIENA; See Mistresse where our jolly Forrester comes. And you are not a little glad thereof (quoth ALIENA) your nose betrayes what porridge you love, the wind can not bee tied within his quarter, the Sunne shaddowed with a vaile, Oyle hidden in water, nor Loue kept out of a Womans lookes: but no more of that, Lupus est in fabula. As soone as ROSADER was come within the reach of her tungs ende, ALIENA began thus: Why now gentle Forrester, what wind hath kept you from hence? that being so newly married, you haue no more care of your ROSALYNE, but to absent your selfe so long dayes? Are these the passions you painted out so in your Sonnets and roundelais? I see well hote love is soone colde, and that the fancie of men, is like to a loose feather that wandreth in the aire with the blast of euerie wind. You are deceived Mistres quoth ROSADER, twas a coppie of vnkindnesse that kept me hence, in that I being married, you carried away the Bryde: but if I haue given anie occasion of offence by absenting my selfe these three dayes, I humblie sue for pardon: which you must grant of course, in that the fault is so friendly confessed with penance. But to tell you the truth (faire Mistresse, and my good ROSALYNE) my eldest Brother by the injurie of TORISMOND is banished from Bourdeaux, and by chaunce hee and I met in the Forrest. And heere ROSADER discoursed vnto them what had hapned betwixt them: which reconcilement made them gladde, especially GANIMEDE. But ALIENA hearing of the tyrannie of her Father, grieved inwardly, and yet smothered all things with such secrecy, that the concealing was more sorrow than the conceit: yet that her estate might be hid still, shee made faire weather of it, and so let all passe.

M 2

For-
Euphues

Fortune, that sawe how these parties valued not her Deity, but helde her power in scorne, thought to have about with them, and brought the matter to passe thus. Certaine Rascalls that liued by prowling in the Forrest, who for feare of the Prouost Marshall had caues in the groves and thickets, to shrowde themselfes from his traines; hearing of the beautie of this faire Shepheardeffe Aliena, thought to steale her away, and to giue her to the King for a present; hoping, because the King was a great lechour, by such a gift to purchase all their pardons: and therfore came to take her and her Page away. Thus resolued, while Aliena and Ganimede were in this fad talk, they came rushing in, and laid violent hands vpon Aliena and her Page, which made them crie out to Rosader: who hauing the valour of his father stamped in his heart, thought rather to die in defence of his friends, than anie way be toucht with the leaft blemish of dishonour; and therfore dealt such blowes amongst them with his weapon, as he did witnesse well vpon their carcasses, that he was no coward. But as Ne Hercules quidem contra duos, so Rosader could not resist a multitude, hauing none to backe him; so that he was not onely rebatted, but sore wounded, and Aliena and Ganimede had been quite carried away by these Rascalls, had not Fortune (that ment to turne her frowne into a fauour) brought Saladyne that way by chaunce; who wandring to finde out his Brothers Walke, encountered this cruie: and seeing not onely a shepheardeffe and her boy forced, but his brother wounded, he heaued vp a forrest bill he had on his necke, and the first hee stroke had never after more neede of the Phisition: redoubling his blowes with such courage, that the slaues were amazed at his valour.

Rosader epying his brother so fortunately arrriued, and seeing how valiantly he behaued himselfe, though sore wounded, rushed amongst them, and laid on such load, that some of the cruie were slaine, and the rest fled, leaving Aliena & Ganimede in the possession of Rosader and Saladyne.

Aliena
golden Legacie.

ALIENA after she had breathed a while and was come to her selfe from this feare, lookt about her, and saw where GANIMEDE was busie dressing vp the wounds of the Forrester; but she cast her eye vpon this courteous champion that had made so hote a rescue, and that with such affection, that shee began to meaure euerie part of him with fauour, and in her selfe to commend his personage and his vertue, holding him for a resolute man, that durst assaile such a troupe of unbridled villaines. At last gathering her spirites together, she returned him these thankes.

Gentle sir, whatsoeuer you be that haue adventured your flesh to relieue our fortunes, as we holde you valiant, so we esteeme you courteous, and to haue as manie hidden vertues, as you haue maniested resolutions. Wee poore Shepheardes haue no wealth but our flockes, and therefore can we not make requitall with anie great treaures: but our recompence is thankes, and our rewardes to our friends without faining. For ranfome therefore of this our rescue, you must content your selfe to take such a kinde gramecie, as a poore Shepheardesse and her Page may giue: with promisse (in what wee may) neuer to prooue ingratefull. For this Gentleman that is hurt, yong ROSADER, he is our good neighbour and familiar acquaintance, weelee pay him with smiles, and feede him with loue-lookes: and though he bee neuer the fatter at the yeares ende, yet wele so hamper him that he shall holde himselfe satisfied.

SALADYNE hearing this Shepheardesse speake so wisely began more narrowly to prie into her perfection, and to furuey all her liniaments with a curious insight; so long dallying in the flame of her beautie, that to his cost he found her to be most excellent: for Loue that lurked in all these broiles to haue a blowe or two, seeing the parties at the gaze, encountred them both with such a venie, that the stroke pierst to the heart so deepe, as it could neuer after be raced out. At last after he had looked so long, till ALIENA waxt red, he returned her this answere.

M 3

Faire
Euphues

Faire Shepheardesse, if Fortune graced mee with such good hap, as to doo you anie fauour, I holde my selfe as contented, as if I had gotten a great conquest: for the relieue of distresse women is the speciall point, that Gentlemen are tied vnto by honoure; seeing then my hazarde to rescue your harmes, was rather dutie than curtesie, thakes is more than belongs to the requitall of such a fauour. But leaft I might seeme either too coye or too carelssse of a Gentlewoman proffer, I will take your kinde gramerie for a recompence. All this while that he spake, GANIMEDE lookest earnestly vpon him, and said; Trulie ROSADER, this Gentleman fauours you much in the feature of your face. No meruaile (quoth hee, gentle Swaine) for tis my eldest brother SALADYNE. Your brother quoth ALIENA? (& with that the bluift) he is the more welcome, and I holde myselfe the more his debter: and for that he hath in my behalfe done such a peecce of servise, if it please him to doo me that honour, I will call him servuant, and he shall call me Mistresse. Content sweet Mistresse quoth SALADYNE, and when I forget to call you so, I will be vnmindfull of mine owne selfe. Away with these quirkes and quiddities of loue quoth ROSADER, and give me some drinke, for I am passing thristie, and then wil I home for my wounds bleede sore, and I will haue them dreft. GANIMEDE had teares in her eyes, and passions in her heart to see her ROSADER so pained, and therefore stept hastily to the bottle, and filling out some wine in a Mazer, thee spiced it with such comfortable drugs as she had about her, and gave it him; which did comfort ROSADER: that rising (with the helpe of his brother) he tooke his leaue of them, and went to his Lodge. GANIMEDE afoone as they were out of sight ledde his fockes downe to a vale, and there vnder the shadow of a Beech tree sate downe, and began to mourne the misfortunes of her sweete heart.

And ALIENA (as a woman passing discontent) feuering her selfe from her GANIMEDE, sitting vnder a Lymon tree, began to sigh out the passions of her newe Loue, and to meditate
golden Legacie.  
ditate with her selfe on this manner.

Alienaes meditation.

A ye me, now I see, and sorrowing sight to see that DI-
ANAES Lawrells are harbours for VENUS Doues,
that there trace as well through the Lawnes, want-
tons as chaste ones; that CALISTO be the neuer so charie, will
cast one amorous eye at courting IOUE: that DIANA her self
will change her shape, but shee will honour Loue in a shad-
dow: that maidens eyes be they as hard as Diamonds, yet
CUPIDE hath drugs to make them more pliable than waxe.
See ALINDA, howe Fortune and Loue haue interleued themselfes to be thy foes: and to make thee their subiect or
els an abieft, haue inueigled thy fight with a most beautiful
objeckt. Alate thou didst holde VENUS for a giglot, not a god-
desse; and now thou shalt be forst to fue supplicant to her De-
itie. CUPIDE was a boy and blinde, but alas his eye had aime
inough to pierce thee to the heart. While I liued in the
Court, I helde Loue in contempt, and in high feates I had
small desires. I knewe not affection while I liued in digni-
tie, nor could VENUS counterchecke me, as long as my for-
tune was malestie, and my thoughtes honour: and shall I
nowe bee high in desires, when I am made lowe by De-
stenie?

I haue hearde them faye, that Loue lookes not at low
cottages, that VENUS liettes in Roabes not in ragges,
that CUPIDE flyes so high, that hee scornes to touche
pouertie with his heele. Tuh ALINDA, these are but olde
wiues tales, and neither authentical precepts, nor infa-
lible principles: for Experience tells thee, that Pea-
faunts haue theyr passions, as well as Princes, that
Swaynees as they haue their labours, so they haue theyr
amours, and Loue lurkes alioone about a Sheepcoate, as
a Pallaiice.

Ah
Euphues

Ah Alinda, this day in avoiding a prejudice thou art fallen into a deeper mischiefe; being rescued from the robbers, thou art become captive to Saladyne: and what then? Women must love, or they must cease to live: and therefore did Nature frame them faire, that they might be subjects to fancy. But perhaps Saladyne's eye is leuelde vpon a more seemelier Saint. If it be so, beare thy passions with patience, say Loue hath wrong thee, that hath not wrong him; and if he be proud in contempt, bee thou rich in content; and rather die than discover anie desire: for there is nothing more precious in a woman, than to conceal Loue, and to die modest. He is the sonne and heire of Sir Iohn of Bourdeaux, a youth comely enough: oh Alinda, too comely, els hadst not thou been thus discontent; valiant, and that fettered thine eye; wise, els hadst thou not been nowe wonne: but for all these vertues, banished by thy father; and therefore if hee know thy parentage, he will hate the fruite for the tree, and condemn the yong sien for the olde stocke. Well, howsoever, I must love: and whomsoever, I will: and whatsoever betide, Aliena will thinke well of Saladyne: supposhe of me as he please. And with that fetching a deepe sigh, the rife vp, and went to Ganimede: who all this while fate in a great dumpe, fearing the imminent danger of her friend Rosader; but now Aliena began to comfort her, her selfe beeing ouer grown with sorrowes, and to recall her from her melancholie with manie pleasaunt persuasions. Ganimede tooke all in the best part, and so they went home together after they had folded their flockes, supping with olde Coridon, who had prouided there cane. He after supper, to passe away the night while bedde time, began a long discourse, how Montanus the yong Shepheard that was in loue with Phoebe, could by no meanes obtaine anie favour at her hands: but still pained in reftlesse passions, remained a hopelesse and perplexed Louer. I would I might (quoth Aliena) once see that Phoebe, is shee fo faire, that she thinkes no shepheard worthie of her beautie: or so froward,
ward that no loue nor loyaltie will content hir: or so coye, that she requires a long time to be wooed: or so foolish that she forgets, that like a fop she must haue a large harvest for a little cornes.

I cannot distinguish (quoth CORIDON) of these nice qualities: but one of these dayes I'll bring MONTANUS and her downe, that you may both see their persons, and note their passions: and then where the blame is, there let it rest. But this I am sure quoth CORIDON, if all maidens were of her minde, the world would growe to a madde passe; for there would be great store of wooing and little wedding, manie words and little worship, much follie and no faith. At this sad sentence of CORIDON so solemnly brought forth, ALIENA smiled: and because it was late, she and her page went to bed, both of them having fleas in their eares to keep the awake, GANIMEDE for the hurt of her ROSADER, and ALIENA for the affection she bore to SALADYNE. In this discontented humor they past away the time, til falling on sleep, their senses at rest, Loue left them to their quiet slumbers: which were not long. For as soon as PHCEBUS rose from his AURORA, and began to mount him in the skie, summoning the Plough-swaines to their handie labour, ALIENA arose; and going to the couche where GANIMEDE laye, awakened her page, and said the morning was farre spent, the dew fall, and time called them awaye to their foldes. Ah, ah, (quoth GANIMEDE) is the winde in that doore? then in faith I perceive that there is no Diamond so harde but will yeld to the file, no Cedar so strong but the winde will shake, nor anie minde so chaste but Loue will change. Well ALIENA, must SALADYNE be the man, and will it be a match? Trust me he is faire and valiant, the sonne of a worthie Knight; whome if hee imitate in perfection as hee represents him in proportion, he is worthie of no lesser than ALIENA. But he is an exile: what then? I hope my Mistres respects the vertues not the wealth, and measures the qualities not the substance. Tho' dames that are like DANA, that like loue in

N  no
Euphues

no shape but in a shower of golde; I wish them husbandes with much wealth and little wit; that the want of the one may blemish the abundance of the other. It should (my Aliena) staine the honour of a Shephardes life to set the end of passions upon pelfe. Loues eyes looks not so low as gold, there is no fees to be paid in Cupids Courtes: and in elder time (as Coridon hath tolde me) the Shepheardes Loues gifts were apples and chestnuts, & then their desires were loyall and their thoughts constant. But now

Quaerenda pecunia primum, post nummos virtus.
And the time is grown to that which Horace in his Satyres wrote on:

omnis enim res

Virtus-fama decus divina humandque pulchris
Divitiis parent: quas qui-constrinxerit ille
Clarus est, fortis, iustus, sapiens, etiam & rex
Et quic quid volet-

But Aliena let it not be so with thee in thy fancies, but respect his faith, and there an ende. Aliena hearing Ganimeede thus forward to further Saladyne in his affections, thought she kist the childe for the nurfes sake, and wooed for him that she might please Rosader, made this replie; Why Ganimeede, whereof growes this perfwafion? Haft thou seene Loue in my lookes? Or are mine eyes grown so amorous, that they discover some new entertainted fancies? If thou measurest my thoughtes by my countenance, thou maist prooue as ill a Physiognomer as the Lapidarie, that aymes at the secrete vertues of the Topace, by the exterior shadoe of the stone. The operation of the Agate is not known by the strakes, nor the Diamond prized by his brillantess, but by his hardnesse. The Carbuncle that shineth moast, is not euer the most precious: and the Apothecaries choose not flowers for their coulours, but for their vertues. Womens faces are not alwaies Kalenders of fancie, nor doo their thoughtes and their lookes euer agree: for when their eyes are full of fauors, then they are oft most emptie
tie of desire: and when they see me to frown at disdaine, then are they most forwarde to affection. If I bee melancholie, then GANIMEDE tis not a consequene that I am entangled with the perfection of SALADYNE. But seeing fire cannot be hid in the straw, nor Loue kept so couert but it will bee spied, what should friends conceale fancies? Know my GANIMEDE, the beautie and valour, the wit and prouesse of SALADYNE hath fettered ALIENA so farre, as there is no obiect pleasing to her eyes, but the sight of SALADYNE: and if loue haue done me injustice, to wrap his thoughts in the foldes of my fare, and that he be as deeply enamoured as I am passionate; I tell thee GANIMEDE, there shall not be much wooing, for she is alreadie wonne, and what needes a longer batterie. I am glad quoth GANIMEDE that it shall be thus proportioned, you to match with SALADYNE, and I with ROSADER: thus haue the Deftenies fauoured vs with some pleasing aspect, that haue made vs as private in our loues, as familiar in our fortunes.

With this GANIMEDE start vp, made her readie, & went into the fields with ALIENA: where unfolding their flockes, they fate them downe vnnder an Oliue treé, both of them amorous, and yet diverslie affected; ALIENA ioying in the excellence of SALADYNE, and GANIMEDE forroweing for the wounds of her ROSADER, not quiet in thought till she might heare of his health. As thus both of them fate in their dumpes, they might ephie where CORIDON came running towards them (almost out of breath with his hast). What newes with you (quoth ALIENA) that you come in such poft? Oh Mistres (quoth CORIDON) you haue a long time desiered to see PHÆBE the faire Shepheardesse whom MONTANUS loues: so nowe if it please you and GANIMEDE but to walke with me to yonder thicket, there shall you see MONTANUS and her sitting by a Fountaine; he courting with his Countrey ditties, and she as coyse as if she helde Loue in disdaine.

The newes were so welcome to the two Louers, that
Euphues

vp they rose, and went with CORIDON. Assoone as they drew nigh the thicket, they might espie where PHŒBE sate, (the fairest Shepheardeffe in all Arden, and he the frolickft Swaine in the whole Forrest) she in a peticoate of scarlet, couered with a greene mantle; and to shrowde her from the Sunne, a chaplet of roses: from vnder which appeared a face full of Natures excellence, and two such eyes as might haue amated a greater man than MONTANUS. At gaze vp-pon this gorgeous Nymph fat the Shepheard, feeding his eyes with her fauours, wooing with such piteous lookes, & courting with such deep straing fighs, as would haue made DIANA her selfe to haue been compassionat. At last, fixing his lookes on the riches of her face, his head on his hande, and his elbow on his knee, he sung this mournefull Dittie.

Montanus Sonnet.

A Turtle sate upon a leaveleffe tree,
Mourning her absenjt pheare
With sad and forrie cheare:
About her wondring flood
The citizens of Wood,
And whilest her plumes she rents
And for her loue laments,
The fately trees complained them,
The birdes with sorrow paine them:
Each one that doth her view
Her paine and sorrowes rue.
But were the sorrowes knowen
That me hath overthrownen,
Oh how would Phœbe sigh, if she did looke on me?

The loue sicke Polypheme that could not see,
Who on the barraine shore
His fortunes doth deplore,

And
And melteth all in mone
For Galatea gone:
And with his piteous cries
Afflicts both earth and Skies:
And to his woe betooke
Doth breake both pipe and hooke;
For whome complaines the Morne,
For whom the Sea Nymphs mourne.
Alas his paine is nought:
For were my woe but thought,
Oh how would Phœbe sigh, if she did looke on mee?

Beyond compare my paine
yet glad am I,
If gentle Phœbe daime
 to see her Montan die.

After this, Montanus felt his passions so extreme, that he fell into this exclamation against the injustice of Loue.

Helas Tirant plein de rigueur,
Modere un peu ta violence:
Que te fers si grande despenfe?
C'est trop de flammes pour un cœur.
Espargues en une eftin celle,
Puis fay ton effort d'esmadoir,
La fiere qui ne veut point voir,
En quel fu je brule pour elle.
Execute Amour ce defsein,
Et rabaisse un peu ton audace,
Son cuer ne doit estre de glace.
Bien que elle ait de Niege le fein.
Euphues

Montanus ended his Sonet with such a volley of sighs, and such a stream of tears, as might have moved any but Phæbe to have granted him favour. But she measuring all his passions with a coy disdaine, and triumphing in the poore Shepheardes patheticall humours, smiling at his martyrdom, as though love had been no maladie, scornfully warbled out this Sonnet.

Phæbes Sonnet a replie to Montanus passion.

Downe a downe.

Thus Phillis sung
by fancie once distressed:
Who so by foolish Love are sung,
are worthely oppressed.

And so sing I. With a downe, downe, &c.

When Love was first begot,
And by the moouers will
Did fall to humane lot
His solace to fulfill.
Dewoid of all deceit,
A chast and holy fire
Did quicken mans conceit,
And womens breast inspire.
The Gods that saw the good
That mortalls did approve,
With kinde and holy mood
Began to talke of Love.

Downe a downe,

Thus Phillis sung
by fancie once distressed, &c.

But
golden Legacie.

But during this accord,
A wonder strange to heare:
Whilst Love in deed and word
Most faithfull did appeare.
False semblance came in place
By iealosie attended,
And with a doubles face
Both love and fancie blended.
Which made the Gods forsake,
And men from fancie fle,
And maidens scorn a make;
Forfooth and so will I.

Downe a downe.

Thus Phillis sung
by fancie once distressed;
Who so by foolish Love are flung
are worthely oppressed.

And so sing I.

with downe a downe, adowne downe, a-

Montanus hearing the oruel resolution of Phoebe, was
so ouergrown with passions, that from amorous Ditties
he fell flat into these tearmes; Ah Phoebe quoth he, where-
of art thou made, that thou regardest not my maladie? Am
I so hatefull an obiec't, that thine eyes condemnpe me for an
abiec't? or so base, that thy desires cannot stoope so lowe as to
lende mee a gracious looke? My passions are manie, my
loues more, my thoughts loyaltie, and my fancie faith: all
deuoted in humble deuoure to the service of Phoebe: & shal
I reape no reward for such fealties. The Swaines daylie
labours is quit with the euening hire, the Ploughmans
toyle is cased with the hope of corne, what the Ox sweates
out at the plough he fatneth at the cribbe: but unfortunate
Montanus hath no value for his sorrowes, nor anie hope of
recom-
Euphues

recôpence for the hazard of his perplexed passions. If PHŒBE, time may plead the profoe of my truth, twice seven winters haue I loued faire PHŒBE: if constancie bee a cause to farther my sute, MONTANUS thoughtes haue beene sealed in the sweete of PHŒBES excellence, as farre from chaunge as he from loue: if outward passions may discouer inward affections, the furrowes in my face may decypher the so-rowes of my heart, and the mappe of my lookes the griefes of my minde. Thou seeft (PHŒBE) the teares of despayre haue made my cheekes full of wrinkles, and my scalding sighes haue made the aire Eccho her pitie conceived in my plaints: PHILOMELE hearing my passions, hath left her mournfull tunes to liften to the discouer of my misheries. I haue pourtraied in euerie tree the beautie of my Mistresse, & the despaire of my loues. What is it in the woods cannot witnes my woes? and who is it would not pitie my plaints? Onely POŒBE. And why? Because I am MONTANUS, and she PHŒBE; I a worthlesse Swaine and shee the most excellent of all faires. Beautifull PHŒBE, oh might I say pitifull, then happie were I though I tasted but one minute of that good hap. Measure MONTANUS not by his fortunes but by his loues; and ballaunce not his wealth, but his defires, and lend but one gracious looke to cure a heape of disquieted cares: if not, ah if PHŒBE can not loue, let a storne of frownes ende the discontent of my thoughts, and so let me perish in my defires, because they are aboue my deserts: onely at my death this favour cannot be denied me, that all shall say, MONTANUS died for loue of harde hearted PHŒBE. At these words she fild her face full of frownes, and made him this short and sharpe replie.

Importunate Shepheard, whose loues are lawlesse, because restlesse: are thy passions so extreame that thou canst not conceale them with patience? Or art thou so folly-sick, that thou must needes be fancie-sicke? and in thy affection tied to such an exigent, as none serues but PHŒBE. Well sir, if your market may be made no where els, home again,
golden Legacie. 49

for your Mart is at the fairest. PHOEBE is no lettuce for your lippes, and her grapes hangs so high, that gaze at them you may, but touch them you cannot. Yet MONTANUS I speake not this in pride, but in dißdaine; not that I scorne thee, but that I hate Loue: for I count it as great honour to triumph ouer Fancie, as ouer Fortune. Reft thee content therefore MONTANUS, cease from thy loues, and bridle thy lookes; quench the sparkles before they grow to a further flame: for in louing me thou shalt liue by losse, & what thou vtterest in words, are all written in the winde. Wert thou (MONTANUS) as faire as PARIS, as hardie as HECTOR, as constant as TROYLUS, as louing as LEANDER; PHOEBE could not loue, because she cannot loue at all: and therefore if thou pursue me with PHŒBUS, I must flie with DAPHNE.

GANIMEDE ouer-hearing all these passions of MONTANUS, could not brooke the crueltie of PHOEBE, but starting from behinde the bufh said; And if Damzell you fled from me, I would transforme you as DAPHNE to a bay, and then in contempt trample your branches vnder my fèete. PHOEBE at this sodaine replie was amazed, especially when she saw so faire a Swaine as GANIMEDE; blushing therefore, shee would haue been gone: but that he held her by the hand, and prosecuted his replie thus. What Shepheardesse, so flyre and so cruell? Dißdaine beseemes not cottages, nor coynes maides: for either they be condemned to bee too proude, or too froward. Take heede (faire Nymph) that in despißng Loue, you be not ouer-reacht with Loue, and in shaking off all, shape your selfe to your own shaddow: and so with NARCISSUS prooue passionate & yet vnpitied. Oft haue I heard, and sometimés haue I seene, high dißdaine turned to hot de-sires. Because thou art beautifull, be not so coy: as there is nothing more faire, so there is nothing more fading, as momentary as the shadowes which growes from a clowdie Sunne. Such (my faire Shepheardesse) as dißdaine in youth desire in age, and then are they hated in the winter, that might haue been loued in the prime. A wrinkled maide

O is
Euphues

is like to a parched Rofe, that is caft vp in coffeys to pleafe
the smell, not wore in the hand to content the eye. There
is no follie in Loue to had I wift: and therefore be rulde by
me, Loue while thou art young, leaft thou be disdained when
thou art olde. Beautie nor time cannot bee recalde, and if
thou loue, like of MONTAUNS: for as his desires are manie,
so his deserts are great.

PHŒBE all this while gazed on the perfection of GANIMEDE, as deeplie enamoured on his perfection, as MONTANUS inueigled with hers: for her eye made suruey of his excellent feature, which she found so rare, that she thought the ghost of ADONIS had been leapt from ELIZIUM in the shape of a Swaine. When she bluht at her owne follie to looke so long on a stranger, she mildlie made aunswere to GANIMEDE thus. I cannot deny sir but I haue heard of Loue, though I never felt Loue; and haue read of such a Goddesse as VENUS, though I never saw anie but her picture: & perhaps, and with that she waxed red and bafhful, and with all silent: which GANIMEDE perceiving, commended in her selfe the bafhfulness of the maide, and desired her to goe for-
ward. And perhaps sir (quoth she) mine eye hath ben more prodigall to day than euer before: and with that she staie a-
gaine, as one greatly passionate and perplexed. ALIENA see-
ing the hare through the maze, bade her forwarde with her prattle: but in vaine, for at this abrupt periode she broke of, and with her eyes full of teares, and her face couered with a vermilion die, she fate downe and sightht. Whereupon,
ALIENA and GANIMEDE seeing the Shepheardesse in such
a strange plight, left PHŒBE with her MONTANUS, with her
friendly that shee would be more pliant to Loue, leaft in penaunce VENUS toynd her to some sharpe repentaunce. PHŒBE made no replie, but fetched such a sigh, that Eccho made relation of her plaint: givynge GANIMEDE such an a-
dieu with a piercing glaunce, that the amorous Girle-boye perceiued PHŒBE was pincht by the heele.

But leaving PHŒBE to the follies of her new fancie, and

MONTA-
golden Legacie.

Montanus to attend upon her; to Saladyne, who all this last night could not rest for the remembrance of Aliena: infor much that he framed aswéeete conceived sonnet to content his humour, which he put in his bosome: being requested by his brother Rosader to go to Aliena and Ganimede, to signifie vnto them that his wounds were not dangerous. A more happe messenger could not happen to Saladyne, that taking his Forrest bolt on his necke, he trudgeth in all haft towards the plaines, where Alienaes flockes did feede: coming iust to the place when they returned from Montanus and Phoeb. Fortune so conducted this iollie Forrester, that he encountered them and Coridon, whom he presently saluted in this manner.

Faire Shepherdesse, and too faire, vnlesse your beautie be tempred with courtesie, & the liniaments of the face graced with the lowlinesse of minde: as manie good fortunes to you and your Page, as your felues can desir, or I imagine. My brother Rosader (in the grieafe of his greene wounds) stille mindfull of his friends, hath sent me to you with a kind salute, to shew that he brookes his paines with the more patience, in that he holds the parties precious in whose defence he receiued the preiudice. The report of your welfare, will bee a great comfort to his distempered bodie and distressfed thoughts, and therefore he sent mee with a strict charge to visite you. And you (quoth Aliena) are the more welcome in that you are mesienger from so kind a Gentleman, whose paines we compassionat with as great sorrowe, as hee brookes them with grieafe; and his wounds breedes in vs as manie passions, as in him extremities: so that what difquiet hee feeleth in bodie, wee partake in heart. Wishing (if wee might) that our mishap might salue his maladie. But seeing our wills yeelds him little ease, our orizons are never idle to the Gods for his recoverie. I pray youth (quoth Ganimede with teares in his eies) when the Surgeon searcht him, helde he his wounds dangerous? Dangerous (quoth Saladyne) but not mortall: and the sooner to be cured, in
Euphues

that his patient is not impatient of anie paines: whereupon my brother hopes within these ten dayes to walke abroad and visite you himselfe. In the meane time (quoth GANIMEDE) say his ROSALYNDE commends her to him and bids him be of good cheere. I know not (quoth SALADYNE) who that ROSALYNDE is, but whatsoever she is, her name is neuer out of his mouth: but amidst the deepest of his passions he veth ROSALYNDE as a charmee to appease all sorrows with patience. Insomuch that I conjecture my brother is in loue, and she some Paragon that holdes his hart perplexed: whose name he oft records with sighs, sometimes with teares, straight with ioy, then with smiles; as if in one person Loue had lodg'd a Chaos of confused passions. Wherein I haue noted the variable disposition of fancie, that like the POLYPE in colours, so it changeth into sundrie humours: being as it shou'd seeme a combate mixt with disquiet, and a bitter pleasure wrapt in a sweete preiuide, like to the SINOPE tree, whose blossomes delight the smell, and whose fruite infects the tast. By my faith (quoth ALIENA) sir, you are deepe read in loue, or growes your insight into affection by experience? Howsoever, you are a great Philosopher in VENUS principles, els could you not discouer her secrete aphorismes. But sir our countrey amours are not like your courtly fancies, nor is our wooing like your suing: for poore shepheardes neuer plaine them till loue paine them, where the Courtiers eyes is full of passions when his heart is moost free from affection: they court to discouer their eloquence, we wooe to eafe our sorrowes: euerie faire face with them must haue a new fancie sealed with a foresinger kiss and a farre fetcht sigh; we heere loue one, and liue to that one so long as life can maintaine loue, ving few ceremonies because we know fewe subtilties, and little eloquence for that wee lightly accompt of flatterie: only faith and troth thats shepheardes wooing, and sir howe like you of this? So (quoth SALADYNE) as I could tie my selfe to such loue. What, and looke so low as a Shepheardesse, being the Sonne of Sir Iohn
golden Legacie. 51

JOHN of Bourdeaux: such desires were a disgrace to your honours. And with that surueying exquisitely euerie part of him, as uttering all these words in a deepe passion, she espied the paper in his bosome: whereupon growing ieralous that it was some amorous Sonnet, shee sodainly snatcht it out of his bosome, and asked if it were any secret? She was bashfull, and SALADYNE blusht: which she perceiuing sayd; Nay then sir, if you waxe redde, my life for yours tis some Loue matter: I will see your Mistresse name, her praises, and your passions. And with that she looke on it: which was written to this effect.

Saladynes Sonnet.

If it be true that heavens eternity course
With restlesse sway and ceaselesse turning glides,
If aire inconstant be, and swellingourse
Turne and returnes with many fluent tides,
    If earth in winter summers pride estrange,
    And Nature seemeth onely faire in change.

If it be true that our immortall spight
Deriude from heavenly pure, in wandering still
In noueltie and strangenesse doth delight,
And by discoverent power discerneth ill,
    And if the bodie for to worke his best
    Doth with the seasons change his place of rest:

Whence comes it that (inforst by furious Skies)
I change both place and joyle, but not my hart?
Yet selue not in this change my maladies?
Whence grows it that each object workes my smart?
    Alas I see my faith procures my mislese,
    And change in loue against my nature is.
    Et florida pungunt.

O 3

Ali-
Euphues

ALIENA having read over his sonnet, began thus plesantly to descant upon it. I see SALADYNE (quoth she) that as the Sunne is no Sunne without his brightnesse, nor the diamond accounted for precious vnleffe it be hard: so men are not men vnleffe they be in loue; and their honours are measured by their amours not their labours, counting it more commendable for a Gentleman to be full of fancie, than full of vertue. I had thought

Otia fi tollas periere Cupidinis arcus,
Contemptuq iacent, & fine luce faces:

But I see QUIDS axiome is not authenticall, for euen labor hath her loues, and extremitie is no pumice stone to race out fancie. Your selfe exiled from your wealth, friends & country by TORISMOND, (forwvse enough to suppress affectiones) yet amidst the depth of these extreamities, Loue will be Lord, and shew his power to bee more predominant than Fortune. But I pray you sir (if without offence I maye craue it) are they some new thoughts, or some olde desires? SALADYNE (that now saw opportunitie pleasaunt) thought to strike while the yron was hote, and therefore taking ALIENA by the hand fate downe by her; and GANIMEDE to giue them leave to their Loues, founde her selfe busie about the foldes, whilest SALADYNE fell into this prattle with ALIENA.

Faire Mistres, if I bee blunt in discouering my affectiones, and vse little eloquence in levelling out my loues: I appeale for pardon to your owne principles that say, Shepheards vse fewe ceremonies, for that they acquaint thefelues with fewe subtleties: to frame my selfe therefore to your countrey fashion with much faith and little flatterie, knowe beautiful Shepheardesses, that whilst I liued in the court I knew not Loues cumber, but I held affection as a toy, not as a maladie; vuing fancie as the HIBERBOREI do their flowers, which they weare in their boisme all day, and caft them in the fire for fuell all night. I liked al because I loued none, and who was most faire on her I fed mine eye: but as charely
golden Legacie.

rely as the Bee, that asoone as shee hath suckt honnie from the rose, flies straight to the next Marigold. Liviing thus at mine owne lift, I wondred at such as were in loue, & when I read their passions, I tooke them only for poemes that flowed from the quicknesse of the wit not the sorrowes of the heart. But nowe (faire Nymph) since I became a Forrest, Loue hath taught me such a lesson that I must confesse his deitie and dignitie, and faye as there is nothing so precious as beautie, so there is nothing more piercing than fancie. For fince first I arrived in this place, and mine eie tooke a curious survey of your excellency, I haue been so fettered with your beautie and vertue, as (sweet Aliena) Saladyne without further circumstance loues Aliena. I coulde paint out my desires with long ambages, but seeinge in manie words lies mistrust, and that truth is euer naked; let this suffice for a countrey wooring, Saladyne loues Aliena, and none but Aliena.

Although these words were most heaunely harmonie in the eares of the Shepheardesse: yet to seeme coyse at the first courting, and to disdaine Loue howfoeuer shee desired Loue, she made this replie.

Ah Saladyne, though I seeme simple, yet I am more subtile than to swallow the hook because it hath a painted bait: as men are wilie so women are warie, especially if they haue that wit by others harms to beware. Doo wee not knowe Saladyne, that mens tongues are like Mercuries pipe, that can inchaunt Argus with an hundred eies; and their words as prejudiciall as the charmes of Circes, that transfigure men into monsters. If such Syrens sing, wee poore Women had neede stoppe our eares, leaft in hearing we prove so foolifh hardie as to beleuwe them, and so perrifh in trustinge much, and suspecting little. Saladyne, Piscator ietus sapit, he that hath been once poysioned & afterwards feares not to bowle of euerie potion, is woorthie to suffer double penance. Give me leaue then to mistrust, though I do not condeempne. Saladyne is now in loue with Aliena, he
Euphues

a Gentleman of great Parentage, she a Shepheardeffe of meane Parents; he honourable, and shee poore? Can Loue consist of contrarieties? Will the Fawlcon pearch with the Kistrese, the Lion harbour with the Woolse? Will VENUS ioyne roabes and rags together? Or can there be a sympathie betweene a King and a begger. Then SALADYNE how can I beléeue thée that loue should vnite our thoughts, when Fortune hath set such a difference betweene our degrees? But suppose thou likest of ALIENAES beautie, men in their fancie resemble the waspe, which scornes that flower from which she hath fetcht her waxe; playing like the inhabitants of the Ilande Tenerifa, who when they haue gathered the sweete spices, vfe the trees for fuel: so men when they haue gluttond themselfes with the faire of womens faces, holde them for necessarie euills; and wearied with that which they seemed so much to loue, cast away fancie as children doo their rattles; and loathing that which so depeelie before they likte, especially such as take loue in a minute, & haue their eyes attraéte like icate apt to entertaine anie obiect, are as readie to let it slip againe. SALADYNE hearing howe ALIENA harpt still vppon one string, which was the doubt of mens constancie, hee broke off her sharp inuéctiuue thus.

I graunt ALIENA (quoth hee) manie men haue doone a-misse in proouing soone ripe and soone rotten, but particular instancies inferre no generall conclusions: and therefore I hope what others haue faulect in shall not preijude my fauours. I will not vfe sophiftrie to confirme my loue, for that is subtltie; nor long discourses, leaft my words might bee thought more than my faith: but if this will suffice, that by the honour of a Gentleman I loue ALIENA, and woe ALiena not to crop the blossomes and reiect the tree, but to consummate my faithfull desires, in the honourable ende of marriage.

At this word marriage: ALIENA stood in a maze what to answere: fearing that if she were too coyte to drive him away with
with her disdaine; and if she were too courteous to discover the heate of her desires. In a dilemma thus what to doo, at last this she said. SALADYNE ever since I saw thee, I fauoured thee, I cannot dissemble my desires, because I see thou dost faithfully manifest thy thoughtes, and in liking thee I love thee so farre as mine honour holdes fancie still in suspence: but if I knew thee as vertuous as thy father, or as well qualified as thy brother ROSADER, the doubt should be quicklie decided: but for this time to giue thee an answere, assure thy selfe this, I will either marrie with SALADYNE, or still liue a virgine: and with this they strained one another's hand. Which GANIMEDE espying, thinking he had had his Mistres long enough at shrift, said; what, a match or no? A match (quoth ALIENA) or els it were an ill market. I am glad (quoth GANIMEDE) I would ROSADER were well here to make vp a messie. Well remembred (quoth SALADYNE) I forgot I left my brother ROSADER alone: and therefore leaft being solitarie he should increafe his sorrowes I will haft me to him. May it please you then to command me anie seruice to him, I am readie to be a duetifull messenger. Onely at this time commend me to him (quoth ALIENA) & tell him, though we cannot pleasure him we pray for him. And forget not (quoth GANIMEDE) my commendations: but say to him that ROSALYNE sheds as manie teares from her heart, as he drops of bloud from his wounds, for the sorrow of his misfortunes; feathering all her thoughtes with disquiet, till his welfare procure her content: say thus (good SALADYNE) and so farewell. He hauing his message, gaue a courteous adieu to them both, especially to ALIENA: and so playing loath to depart, went to his brother: But ALIENA, she perplexed and yet joyfull, past away the day pleasantly still praising the perfection of SALADYNE, not ceasing to chat of her new Loue, till evening drew on; and then they folding their sheepe, went home to bed. Where we leave them and returne to PHOEBE.
Euphues

PHŒBE fiered with the uncouth flame of love, returned to her fathers house; so galled with restless passions, as now she began to acknowledge, that as there was no flower so fresh but might bee parched with the Sunne, no tree so strong but might bee shaken with a storm; so there was no thought so chaff, but Time armde with Loue could make amorous: for she that held the DIANA for the Goddesse of her devotion, was now faine to flie to the Altare of VENUS; as suppliant now with prayers, as she was sroward afore with disdain. As she lay in her bed, she called to minde the several beauties of yong GANIMED, first his locks, which being amber hued, pasheth the wreath that PHŒBUS puts on to make his front glorious; his browe of yuorie, was like the feate where Loue and Maiestie sits inthronde to enchaine Fancie; his eyes as bright as the burnishing of the heauen, darting forth frownes with disdain, and smiles with fauor, lightning such lookes as would enflame desire, were shee wrapt in the Circle of the frozen Zoane; in his cheekes the vermilion teinture of the Rofe flourished vpon naturall Alabaster, the blush of the Morne and LUNAES siluer showe were so liuely portrayed, that the TROYAN that fils out wine to IUPITER was not halfe so beautifull; his face was full of pleasance, and all the rest of his liniaments proportioned with such excellence, as PHŒBE was fettred in the sweetnes of his feature. The IDEA of these perfectiones tumbling in her minde, made the poore Shepheardse so perplexed, as feeling a pleasure tempred with intollerable paines, and yet a disquiet mixed with a content, she rather wished to die, than to live in this amorous anguish. But wishing is little worth in such extremities, and therefore was shee forst to pine in her maladie, without anie value for her forrowes. Reveale it the durst not, as daring in such matters to make none her secre-tarie; and to conceal it, why it doubled her griefe: for as fire suppreft growes to the greater flame, and the Current stopt to the more violent streame; so Loue smoathed wrings the heart with the deeper passions.

Per-
Perplexed thus with sundrie agonies, her foode began to faile, and the disquiet of her minde began to worke a diftemperature of her bodie, that to be short Phœbe fell extreme sicke, and so sicke, as there was almoast left no recoverie of health. Her father seeing his faire Phœbe thus distrest, sent for his friends, who sought by medicine to cure, and by counsaile to pacifie, but all in vaine: for although her bodie was feeble through long fastinge, yet she did magis agrotare animo quam corpore. Which her friends perceiued and sorrowed at, but falue it they could not.

The newes of her sicknesse was bruted abroad thorough all the Forrest: which no sooner came to Montanus eare, but he like a madde man came to visite Phœbe. Where sitting by her bedde side, he began his Exordium with so manie teares and sighes, that she perceiuing the extremite of his sorrowes, began now as a lover to pitie them, although Ganimeede helde her from redressing them. Montanus craued to knowe the cause of her sicknesse, tempred with secrete plaints: but she aunswered him (as the rest) with silence, hauing still the forme of Ganimeede in her minde, & coniecturing how shee might reuveal her loues. To vther it in words she found herselfe too bashfull, to discourse by anie friend shee would not trust anie in her amours, to remayne thus perplexed still and conceale all, it was a double death. Whereupon for her laft refuge she resolued to write vnto Ganimeede: and therefore desired Montanus to absent him selfe a while, but not to depart: for she would see if she could steeale a nappe. He was no sooner gone out of the chamber, but reaching to her standish, she tooke penne and paper, and wrote a letter to this effect.
Euphues

Phœbe to Ganimede wisheth what she wants her selfe.

Aire Shepheard (and therefore is PHŒBE infortunate because thou art so faire) although hetherto mine cies were adamants to refist Loue, yet I no sooner saw thy face but they became amorous to intertaine Loue: more devoted to fancie than before they were repugnant to affection, addicted to the one by Nature, and drawn to the other by beautie: which being rare, and made the more excellent by manie vertues, hath so snared the freedome of PHŒBE, as she rests at thy mercie, either to bee made the most fortunate of all Maidens, or the most miserable of all Women. Measure not GANIMEDE my loues by my wealth, nor my desires by my degrees: but thinke my thoughts are as full of faith, as thy face of amiable favours. Then as thou knowest thy selfe most beautifull, suppose me most constant. If thou deemest me hardhearted because I hated MONTANUS, thinke I was forst to it by Fate: if thou saist I am kinde hearted because so lightly I loue thee at the first looke, thinke I was druen to it by Deftenie, whose influence as it is mightie, so it is not to be refisted. If my fortunes were anie thing but infortunate Loue, I woulde stiue with Fortune: but he that wrefts against the will of VENUS, seekes to quench fire with oyle, and to thrust out one thorne by putting in another. If then GANIMEDE, Loue enters at the eie, harbours in the heart, and will neither bee druen out with Phisicke nor reason: pitie me, as one whose maladie hath no value but from thy sweete selfe, whose grieue hath no eafe but through thy graunt, and thinke I am a Virgine, who is deeply wrongd, when I am forst to wooe: and conjecture Loue to bee strong, that is more forceable than Nature.

Thus distressed vnlesse by thee eased, I expect either to liue
golden Legacie.

live fortunate by thy favour, or die miserable by thy denial.
Lifeing in hope. Farewell.

She that must be thine, or
not be at all.

Phæbe.

To this Letter she annexed this Sonnet.

Sonnetto.

My boate doth passe the straights
of seas incenset with fire,
Filde with forgetfulness:
   amidst the winters night,
A blinde and carelesse boy
   (brought up by fonde desire)
Doth guide me in the sea
   of sorrow and despight.

For euerie oare, he sets
   a ranke of foolish thoughts,
And cuts (in steed of wawe)
   a hope without distresse;
The windes of my deepe sighs
   (that thunder still for noughts)
Have split my fayles with feare,
   with care, with heavinesse.

A mightie form of teares,
   a blacke and hideous cloude,
A thousand fierce disdaines
   dooe slacke the halyards oft:

P 3

Till
Euphuies

Till ignorance doo pull
and error hale the shrowdes,
No starre for safetie shines,
no Phoebe from aloft.

Time hath subdued arte,
and joy is slave to woe:
Alas (Loves guide) he kinde;
what shall I perish so?

This Letter and the Sonnet being ended, she could find no fitte messenger to sende it by; and therefore shee called in Montanus, and intreated him to carrie it to GANIMEDE. Although poore Montanus saw day at a little hole, and did perceive what passion pincht her: yet (that he might seeme dutifull to his Mistres in all service) he dissembled the matter, and became a willing messenger of his owne Martyr-dome. And so (taking the letter) went the next morn very early to the Plains where Aliena fed her flockes, and there hee found GANIMEDE sitting under a Pomegranade tree sorrowing for the hard fortunes of her ROSADER. MONTANUS saluted him, and according to his charge delievered GANIMEDE the letters, which (he said) came from PHOEBE. At this the wanton blusht, as being abashed to thinke what newes should come from an unknown Shepheardeesse, but taking the letters vupipt the seales, and read over the discourse of PHOEBES fancies. When shee had read and over-read them, GANIMEDE began to smile, & looking on MONTANUS fell into a great laughter: and with that called ALIENA, to whom she shewed the writings. Who hauing perused them, conceipted them verie pleafantly, and smiled to see how Loue had yoakt her, who before disdained to stoupe to the lure, ALIENA whispering GANIMEDE in the eare, and saying; Knewe PHOEBE what want there were in thee to performe her will, and how vnfit thy kinde is to bee kinde to her, she would be more wife and lesse enamoured: but lea-
golden Legacie.

uing that, I pray thee let vs sport with this Swaine. At that worde, GANIMEDE tournring to MONTANUS, began to glance at him thus.

I pray thee tell me Shepheard, by those sweet thoughts and pleasing sighes that grow from my Mistresse favours, art thou in loue with PHŒBE? Oh my Youth, quoth MONTANUS, were PHŒBE so farre in loue with me, my Flockes would be more fat and their Master more quiet: for through the sorrowes of my discontent growes the leannesse of my sheepe. Alas poore Swaine quoth GANIMEDE, are thy passions so extreme or thy fancie so resolute, that no reasone will blemish the pride of thy affection, and race out that which thou strueft for without hope? Nothing can make me forget PHŒBE, while MONTANUS forget himselfe: for those charactars which true Loue hath stamped, neither the enuie of Time nor Fortune can wipe awaye. Why but MONTANUS quoth GANIMEDE, enter with a deepe insight into the despaire of thy fancies, and thou shalt see the depth of thine owne follies: for (poore man) thy progresse in loue is a regresse to losse, swimming against the streame with the Crab, and flying with APIS INDICA against winde and weather. Thou seekest with PHŒBUS to winne DAPHNE, and shee flies faster than thou canst followe: thy desires foare with the Hobbie, but her disdaine reacheth higher than thou canst make wing. I tell thee MONTANUS, in courting PHŒBE thou barkeft with the Wolues of Syria against the Moone, and roaueft at such a marke with thy thoughtes, as is beyond the pitch of thy bow, praying to Loue when Loue is pitileffe, and thy maladie remedileffe. For proove MONTANUS read these letters, wherein thou shalt fee thy great follies and little hope.

With that MONTANUS tooke them and perused them, but with such sorrow in his lookes, as they bewrayed a fourfe of confused passions, in his heart: at euery line his coulour changed, and euery sentence was ended with a periode of sighes.

At
Euphues

At last, noting PHŒBES extreame desire toward GANIMEDE, and her disdain towards him, giving GANIMEDE the letter, the Shepheard stoode as though hee had neither wonne nor left. Which GANIMEDE perceiuing, wakened him out his dreame thus; Now MONTANUS, doost thou see thou vowest great service and obtinest but little reward: but in lieu of thy loyaltie, she maketh thee as BELLEPHORON carrie thine owne bane. Then drinke not willinglie of that potion wherein thou knowest is poyson, creepe not to her that cares not for thee. What MONTANUS, there are manie as faire as PHŒBE, but most of all more courteous than PHŒBE. I tell thee Shepheard, fauour is Loues fuell: then since thou canst not get that, let the flame vanish into smoake, and rather sorrow for a while than repent thee for euer.

I tell thee GANIMEDE (quoth MONTANUS) as they which are stung with the Scorpion, cannot be recoured but by the Scorpion, nor hee that was wounded with ACHILLES lance be cured but with the same trunchion: so APOLLO was faine to crie out, that Loue was onely eased with Loue, and fancie healed by no medecin but fauor. PHŒBUS had hearbs to heale all hurts but this passion, CYRCES had charmes for all chaunces but for affection, and MERCURIE subtill reasons to refell all griefes but Loue. Perswasiones are bootlesse, Reason lendes no remedie, Counsaile no comfort, to such whome Fancie hath made refolute: and therefore though PHŒBE loues GANIMEDE, yet MONTANUS must honor none but PHŒBE.

Then quoth GANIMEDE, may I rightly tearme thee a despayring Louer, that liueth without ioy, & louest without hope: but what shall I doo MONTANUS to pleasure thee? Shall I despise PHŒBE as she disdaines thee? Oh (quoth MONTANUS) that were to renew my griefes, and double my sorrowes: for the sight of her discontent were the censure of my death. Alas GANIMEDE, though I perish in my thoughtes, let not her die in her desires. Of all passiones, Loue
golden Legacie.

Loue is most impatient: then let not so faire a creature as PHŒBE sink under the burden of so deep a distress. Being loue sicke she is prooued heart sicke, and all for the beautie of GANIMEDE. Thy proportion hath entangled her affection, and she is snared in the beautie of thy excellence. Then fith she loues thee so deeere, mislike not her deadly. Bee thou paramour to such a paragon: shee hath beautie to content thine eye, and flockes to enrich thy store. Thou canst not wish for more than thou shalt winne by her: for she is beautiful, vertuous and wealthie, three deepe perfwasions to make loue frolick. ALIENA seeing MONTANUS cut it against the haire, and plead that GANIMEDE ought to loue PHŒBE, when his onely life was the loue of PHŒBE: anwered him thus. Why MONTANUS dooost thou further this motion? seeing if GANIMEDE marrie PHŒBE thy market is clean mard. Ah Mistres (quoth he) so hath Loue taught mee to honour PHŒBE, that I would prejudice my life to pleasure her, and die in despair rather than she should perish for want. It shall suffice me to see him contented, and to feed mine eye on her favour. If she marrie though it be my Martyrdom: yet if shee bee pleased I will brooke it with patience, and triumph in mine owne starres to see her desires satisfied. Therefore if GANIMEDE bee as courteous as shee is beautiful, let him shew his vertues, in redressing PHŒBES miseries. And this MONTANUS pronounft with such an assured countenance, that it amazed both ALIENA and GANIMEDE to see the resolution of his loues: so that they pitied his passions and commend'd his patience; deuising how they might by anie subtletie, get MONTANUS the favour of PHŒBE. Straight (as Womans heads are full of wyles) GANIMEDE had a fetch to force PHŒBE to fancie the Shepherd MALGRADO the resolution of her minde bee prosecuted his policie thus. MONTANUS (quoth he) seeing PHŒBE is so forlorn least. I might bee counted vnkinde, in not saluing so faire a creature, I will goe with thee to PHŒBE, and there heare her selfe in worde utter that which she hath discouerft with her penne, and then

Q  as
Euphues

as Loue wills me, I will set downe my censure. I will home by our house, and send Coridon to accompany Aliena. Montanus seem'd glad of this determination, and away they goe towards the house of Phoebus. When they drew nigh to the Cottage, Montanus ranne afore, & went in and tolde Phoebus that Ganimeede was at the dore. This word Ganimeede founding in the eares of Phoebus, draue her into such an extasie for ioy, that rising vp in her bed she was halfe reuiued, and her wan colour began to waxe red: and with that came Ganimeede in, who saluted Phoebus with such a curteous looke, that it was halfe a suile to her sorrowes. Sitting him downe by her bed side, hee questioned about her disease, and where the paine chieflie helde her? Phoebus looking as louely as Venus in her night geere, tainting her face with as ruddie a blush as Clitia did when when shee bewrayed her Loues to Phoebus: taking Ganimeede by the hand began thus. Faire shepheard, if loue were not more strong then nature, or fancie the sharpest extreame; my immodesty were the more, and my vertues the lesse: for nature hath framed womens eyes bashfull, their hearts full of feare, and their tongues full of silence: But Loue, that imperious Loue, where his power is predominant, then he peruerts all and wresteth the wealth of nature to his owne will: an Instance in my selfe sayre Ganimeede, for such a fire hath hee kindled in my thoughts, that to finde eafe for the flame, I was forced to passe the bounds of modeftie and seeke a suile at thy handes for my secret harms: blame mee not if I bee ouer bolde for it is thy beautie, and if I be too forward it is fancie, & the deepe insight into thy vertues that makes me thus fond. For let me say in a word, what may be contayned in a volume, Phoebes loues Ganimeede: at this she held downe her head and wept, and Ganimeede rose as one that would suffer no fish to hang on his fingers made this replie. Water not thy plants Phoebus, for I doe pitie thy plaintes, nor seeke not to discouer thy Loues in
golden Legacie.

in teares: for I coniecture thy truest by thy passions: forrow is no salue for loues, nor sighes no remedie for affecti-
on. Therefore frolick PHŒBE, for if GANIMEDE can cure thee, doubt not of recoverie. Yet this let me say without
offence, that it greuues me to thwart MONTANUS in his fanc-
ies, seeing his desires haue ben so resolute, and his thoughts
so loyall: But thou alreadgest that thou art forst from him
by fate; so I tell thee PHŒBE either some farrer or else some
definitie fits my minde rather with ADONIS to die in chase,
than be counted a wanton in VENUS knee. Although I pit-
tie thy martyrdom, yet I can grant no mariage; for though
I held thee faire, yet mine eye is not fettered, Loue growes
not like the hearb Spatanna to his perfeccion in one night
but creepes with the snaille, and yet at last attaines to the
top Festina Lente especially in Loue: for momentarie fancies are oft times the fruites of follies: If PHŒBE I
should like thee as the HIPERBOREI do their Dates, which
banquet with them in the morning and throw them awaile
at night, my folly should be great, and thy repentance more,
Therefore I will haue time to turne my thoughts, and my
Loues shall growe vp as the water Cresses, slowly but with
a deepe roote. Thus PHŒBE thou maist fee I disdain not
though I desire not, remaining indifferent till time and
loue makes me resolute. Therefore PHŒBE seeke not to
suppresse affection, and with the Loue of MONTANUS quench
the remembrance of GANIMEDE, friue thou to hate me as
I seeke to like of thee, and euer haue the duties of MON-
TANUS in thy minde, for I promife thee thou mayst haue
one more welthie but not more loyall. These wordes
were corafues to the perplexed PHŒBE, that sobbing out
sighes and straying out teares thie blubbered out these
wordes.

And shall I then haue no salue of GANIMEDE, but suf-
pence, no hope but a doubtfull hazard, no comfort, but bee
posted off to the will of time's: iustly haue the Gods ballanft
Q 2

my
Euphues

my fortunes, who beeing cruell to MONTANUS found GANIMEDE, as vnkinde to my selfe: so in forcing him perishe for loue, I shall die my selfe with ouermuch loue. I am glad (quoth GANIMEDE) you looke into your owne faults, and see where your shooe wrings you, measuring now the paines of MONTANUS by your owne passions. Truth quoth PHŒBE, and so deeply I repent me of my frowardnesse toward the Shepheard, that could I cease to loue GANIMEDE, I would resolute to like MONTANUS. What if I can with reasone perfwade PHŒBE to mislike of GANIMEDE, will she then fauour MONTANUS? When reasone (quoth she) doth quench that loue that I owe to thee, then will I fancie him: conditionalle, that if my loue can bee supprest with no reasone, as beeing without reasone, GANIMEDE wil onely wed himselfe to PHŒBE. I graunt it faire Shepheardesse quoth he: and to feeede thee with the sweetnesse of hope, this resolute on: I will neuer marrie my selfe to woman but vnto thy selfe: and with that GANIMEDE gave PHŒBE a fruitelesse kisse & such words of comfort, that before GANIMEDE departed she arose out of her bed, and made him and MONTANUS such cheere, as could be found in such a Countrey cottage. GANIMEDE in the midst of their banquet rehearsing the promises of either in MONTANUS fauour, which highly pleased the Shepheard. Thus all three content, and soothe vp in hope, GANIMEDE tooke his leave of his PHŒBE & departed, leauing her a contented woman, and MONTANUS highly pleased. But poore GANIMEDE, who had her thoughtes on her ROSADER, when she calde to remembrance his wounds, filde her eyes full of teares, and her heart full of sorrowes, plodded to finde ALIENA at the Foldes, thinking with her presence to drive away her passions. As she came on the Plaines, she might espie where ROSADER and SALADYNE fate with ALIENA vnder the shade: which sight was a false to her grieue, and such a cordiall vnto her heart, that she tript alongst the Lawnes full of ioy.

At last CORIDON who was with them spied GANIMEDE, and
and with that the Clowne rose, and running to méete him cried, Oh sirha, a match, a match, our Mistres shall be mar-
ried on Sunday. Thus the poore peasant frolickt it before 
GANIMEDE, who comming to the crue saluted them all, and 
especially ROSADER, sayng that hee was glad to see him so 
well recovered of his wounds. I had not gone abroade fo 
soone quoth ROSADER, but that I am bidden to a marriage, 
which on Sunday next muft bee solemnized betweene my 
brother and ALIENA. I see well where Loue leads delay is 
loathsome, and that small wooing serues, where both the 
parties are willing. Truth quoth GANIMEDE: but a hap-
pie day should it be, if ROSADER that day might be married 
to ROSALYNDE. Ah good GANIMEDE (quoth he) by naming 
ROSALYNDE renewe not my forrowes: for the thought of her 
perfections, is the thrall of my miferies. Tush, bee of good 
cheere man quoth GANIMEDE, I haue a friend that is deep-
ly experienst in Negromancie and Magicke, what arte can 
doo shall bee actet for thine aduantage: I will cause him to 
bring in ROSALYNDE, if either France or anie bordering Na-
tion harbour her; and vpon that take the faith of a young 
Shepheard. ALIENA smilde to see how ROSADER frownde, 
thinking that GANIMEDE had iefted with him. But break-
ing off from those matters, the Page (somewhat pleant) 
began to discoursse vnto them what had paft betweene him 
and PHŒBE: which as they laught, so they wondred at; all 
confessing, that there is none so chaft but Loue will change. 
Thus they paft away the day in chat, and when the Sunne 
began to set, they tooke their leaues and departed: ALIENA 
providing for their marriage day such solemne cheere and 
handsome roabes as fitted their countrye eftate, & yet some-
what the better, in that ROSADER had promisfe to bring GER-
RISMOND thether as a guest. GANIMEDE (who then meant 
to discouer her selfe before her father, had made her a gowne 
of greene, and a kirtle of the finest sendall, in such sort that 
she seamed some heauenly Nymph harboured in Countrey 
attire.
Euphues

SALADYNE was not behind in care to set out the nuptials, nor ROSADER unmindful to bid guests, who inued GERISMOND and all his Followers to the Feast: who willingly granted; so that there was nothing but the daye wanting to this marriage. In the meanwhile, PHOEBE being a hidden guest, made her selfe as gorgeous as might be to please the eye of GANIMEDE; and MONTANUS futed himselfe with the cost of many of his flocks to be gallant against that day; for then was GANIMEDE to giue PHOEBE an answere of her loues, and MONTANUS either to heare the doome of his miserie, or the cenfure of his happiness. But while this gear was a bruing, PHOEBE past not one day without visitting her GANIMEDE, so farre were shee wrapt in the beauties of this loyely Swaine. Much prattle they had, and the difcourse of manie passions, PHOEBE wifhing for the daye (as she thought) of her welfare, and GANIMEDE smiling to thinke what vnexptected euent would fall out at the wedding. In these humours the weeke went away, that at laft Sundaye came.

No sooner did PHŒBUS Hench man appeare in the Skie, to giue warning that his masters horfes shoulde bee trapt in his glorious couch, but CORIDON in his holiday sute merualous seemely, in a russet jacket welde with the same, and faced with red worsted, having a paire of blew chamlent sleeues, bound at the wretys with foure yeelow laces, closed afore verie richly with a doffen of pewter buttons: his hofs was of gray karsie, with a large slop bard overthwart the pocket holes with three fair gards, stichet of either side with red thred, his stock was of the own fewed close to his breech, and for to beautifie his hofs, he had truft himself round with a dofen of new thredden points of medley coulour: his bonnet was greene whereon stood a copper brooch with the picture of SAINT DENIS: and to want nothing that might make him amorous in his olde dayes, he had a fayre shyrty band of fine lockram, whipt ouer with Couentreys blew, of no small cost.

Thus
Thus attired, CORIDON bestir'd himselfe as chiefe stickler in these actions, and had frowed all the house with flowers, that it seemed rather some of FLORAES choyce bowers, than anie Countrey cottage.

Thether repaired PHŒBE with all the maides of the forrest to set out the bride in the most seemeliest sort that might be: but howsoever she helpt to pranke out ALIENA, yet her eye was still on GANIMEDE, who was so neate in a fute of gray, that he seemed ENDYMIOn when hee won LUNA with his looke, or PARIS when he plaide the Swaine to get the beautie of the Nymph OENONE. GANIMEDE like a prettie Page waited on his Mistresse ALIENA, and overlook't that all was in a readinesse against the Bridegrome shoulde come. Who attired in a Forresters fute came accompanied with GERISMOND and his brother ROSADER early in the morning; where arrived, they were solemnlie entertained by ALIENA and the rest of the Countrey Swaines, GERISMOND verie highly commending the fortunate choyce of SALADYNE, in that had chosen a Shephearde, whose vertues appeared in her outward beauties, being no lesse faire than seeming moeft.

GANIMEDE comming in and seeing her Father began to blush, Nature working affeets by her secret effects: scarce could she abstaine from teares to see her Father in so lowe fortunes: he that was wont to fit in his royall Pallace, attened on by twelue noble peeres, now to be contented with a simple Cottage, and a troupe of revelling Woodmen for his traine. The consideration of his fall, made GANIMEDE full of sorrowes: yet that shee might triumph ouer Fortune with patience, and not anie way dash that merrie day with her dumpes, shee smothered her melancholy with a shaddow of mirth: and verie reuently welcomed the King, not according to his former degree, but to his present estate, with such diligence, as GERISMOND began to commend the Page for his exquisit perfon, and excellent qualities.

As
Euphues

As thus the King with his Forresters frolickt it among the shepheardes, CORIDON came in with a faire mazer full of Sidar, and presented it to GERISMOND with such a clownish salute, that he began to smile, and tooke it of the old shepheard verie kindly, drinking to ALIENA and the rest of her faire maides, amongst whom PHOEBE was the formost. ALIENA pledged the King, and drunke to ROSADER: so the carrowfe went round from him to PHOEBE, &c. As they were thus drinking and readie to goe to Church, came in MONTANUS apparailed all in tawney, to signifie that he was forsaken; on his head he wore a garland of willowe, his bottle hanged by his fide wheron was painted despaire, and on his sheephooke hung two fonnetts as labels of his loues & fortunes.

Thus attired came MONTANUS in, with his face as full of griefe, as his heart was of sorrowes, shewing in his countenance the map of extremities. Asfoone as the Shepheardes saw him, they did him all the honour they could, as being the flower of all the Swaines in Arden: for a bonnier boy was there not seene since the wanton Wag of Troy that kept sheep in Ida. He seeing the king, and geising it to be GERISMOND, did him all the reuereence his countrey curtseie could affoord. Infomuch that the King wondring at his attire, began to questioin what he was. MONTANUS overhearing him made this replie.

I am sir quoth he Loues Swaine, as full of inward discontentes as I seeme fraught with outward follies. Mine eyes like Bees delight in sweete flowers, but fucking their full on the faire of beautie, they carrye home to the Hiue of my heart farre more gall than honnie, and for one dropppe of pure deaw, a tunne full of deadly Aconiton. I hunt with the Flic to pursue the Eagle, that flying too nigh the Sunne, I perishe with the Sunne: my thoughts are above my reach, and my desires more than my fortunes; yet neither greater than my Loues. But daring with PHAETON, I fall with IRARUS, and seeking to passe the meane, I dye for
[for being so mean, my night sleepes are waking stombers, as full of sorrowes as they be far from rest, & my dayes labors are fruitlesse amors, staring at a star & stombling at a straw, leauing reason to follow after repentance: yet every passion is a pleasure though it pinch, because loue hides his wormes feed in figgs, his poysons in sweet potions, & shades prejudice with the maske of pleasure. The wisest counsellors are my deep discontents, and I hate that which should sole my harm, like the patient which stung with the Tarantula loathes musick, and yet the disease incurable but by melody. Thus (Sir) reflecte I hold my selfe remedies, as lousing without either reward or regard, and yet lousing, because there is none worthy to be loued, but the mistresse of my thoughts. And that I am as full of passions as I haue discours'd in my plaintes, Sir if you please see my Sonnets, and by them cenfur of my sorrowes.

These worde of Montanus brought the king into a great wonder, amazed as much at his wit as his attire: insomuch that he tooke the papers off his hooke, and read them to this effect.

Montanus first Sonnet.

Alas how wander I amidst these woods,
Whereas no day bright shine doth finde access:
But where the melancholy fleeting floods
(Darke as the night) my night of woes expresse,
Disarm'd of reason, spoiled of natures goods,
Without redresse to sole my heavinesse
    I walke, whilst thought (too cruel to my harms)
    With endles grief my needles judgement charmes.

My silent tongue assailed by secret feare,
My traitrous eyes imprisoned in their joy,

R

My
Euphues

My fatall peace dewourd in fained cheare,
My heart inforst to harbour in annoy,
My reason robe of power by yeelding eare,
My fond opinions slave to every toy.

Oh Loue thou guide in my uncertaine way,
Woe to thy bow, thy fire, the cause of my decay.
Et florida pungunt.

When the King had read this Sonnet, he highly commended the device of the shepheard, that could so wittily wrap his passions in a shaddow, and so courtely conceale that which bred his chieuest discontent: affirming, that as the leaft shrubs haue their tops, the smallest hairies their shadowes: so the meanest swaines had their fancies, and in their kynde were as charie of Loue as a King. Whetted on with this deuice, he tooke the second and read it: the effects were these.

Montanus seconde Sonnet.

When the Dog
Full of rage,
With his irefull eyes
Frownes amidst the skies
The Shepheard to affuage
The fury of the heat,
Himselfe doth safely seat
By a fount
Full of faire,
Where a gentle breath
( Mounting from beneath)
Tempreth the aire.

There
golden Legacie.

There his flocks
Drinke their fill,
   And with ease repose
   Whilst sweet sleep doth close
Eyes from toylsome ill.
But I burne
Without rest,
   No defence power
   Shields from Phoebes lower:
Sorrow is my best.
Gentle Loue
Loure no more,
   If thou wilt inuade,
   In the secret shade,
Labour not so sore.
I my selfe
And my flocks
   They their loue to please,
   I my selfe to ease,
Both leave the shadie oakes:
   Content to burne in fire
   Saith Loue doth so desire.
   Et florida pungunt.

GERISMOND seeing the pithy vaine of those Sonets, began
to make further enquiry what hee was? Whereupon ROSADER
discourst vnto him the loue of MONTANUS to PHOEBE,
his great loialtie & her deep crueltie: and how in reuenge
the Gods had made the curious Nymph amorous of yoong
GANIMEDE. Vpon this discourse, ye king was desirous to
see PHOEBE: who being broght before GERISMOND by ROSADER,
shadowed the beauty of her face with such a ver-
milion teinture, that the Kings eyes began to dazle at the

puritie
Euphues

The puritie of her excellence. After GERISMOND had fed his lookes a while vpon her faire, he questioned with her, why she rewarded MONTANUS louse with so little regard, seeing his desertes were many, and his passions extreme. PHOEBE to make reply to the Kings demaund, answered thus: Loue (Sir) is charitie in his lawes, and whatsoever hee sets downe for iustice (be it neuer so vniust) the sentence cannot be reuerit: womens fancies lende fauours not euer by desert, but as they are inforst by their desires: for fancy is tied to the wings of Fate, & what the starres decree, stands for an infallible doome. I know MONTANUS is wife, & womens ears are greatly delighted with wit, as hardly escaping the charme of a plesant toong, as VLISSES the melody of the SYRENS. MONTANUS is bewtifull, and womens eyes are snared in the excellence of objeets, as desirous to feede their lookes with a faire face, as the Bee to suck on a sweet fioure. MONTANUS is welthy, & an ounce of giue me perfwades a woman more than a pound of heare me. DANAЕ was won with a golden flower, when she could not be gotten with all the intreties of IUPITER. I tell you Sir, the string of a womans heart reacheth to the pulfe of her hand, and let a man rub that with gold, & tis hard but she wil prooue his hearts gold. MONTANUS is yoong, a great claue in fancies court: MONTANUS is vertuous, the richest argument that Loue yeelds: & yet knowing all these perfection I praife them, and wonder at them, louing the qualities, but not affecting the perfon, becaufe the Deftenes haue set downe a contrary cenfure. Yet VENUS to ad revenge, hath giue me wine of ye fame grape, a sip of the fame sauce, & firing me with the like paflfo, hath croft me with as il a penance: for I am in loue with a shepheards swaine, as coy to mee as I am cruel to MONTANUS, as peremptory in disdaine as I was peruerse in desire, & that is (quoth she) ALIENAES page, yong GANIMEDE.

GERISMOND desirous to prosecute the ende of these passions, called in GANIMEDE: who knowing the case, came in graced with
golden Legacie. with such a blush, as beautified the Chrifall of his face with a ruddie brightnesse. The King noting well the philonomy of GANIMEDE, began by his favours to call to mind the face of his ROSALYNDE, and with that fetched a deepe sigh. ROSADER that was passing familiar with GERISMOND, demanded of him why he sighed so sore? Because ROSADER (quothee) the favour of GANIMEDE puts mee in minde of ROSALYNDE. At this word, ROSADER sighd so deeply as though his heart would haue burst. And what's the matter (quothe GERISMOND) that you quite mee with such a sigh? Pardon mee Sir (quothe ROSADER) because I loue none but ROSALYNDE. And vpon that condition (quothe GERISMOND) that ROSALYNDE were here, I would this day make vp a marriage betwixt her and thee. At this ALIENA turn'd her head and smilde vpon GANIMEDE, and shee could scarce keep countenance. Yet shee valued all with secrecie, and GERISMOND to drive away such dumpes, questioned with GANIMEDE, what the reason was he regarded not PHOEBES loue, seeing she was as faire as the wantô that brought Troy to ruine. GANIMEDE mildly anwered, If I shuld affect the fair PHOEBE, I should offer poore MONTANUS great wrong to winne that from him in a moment, that hee hath labored for so many monethes. Yet haue I promis'd to the bewtiful shepherdesse, to wed my self neuer to woman except vnto her: but with this promise, yet if I can by reason suppress PHOEBES loue towards me, shee shall like of none but of MONTANUS. To y'q PHOEBE I stand, for my loue is so far beyond reason, as it wil admit no persuasion of reason. For justice q. he, I appeale to GERISMOND: and to his censure wil I stand q. PHOEBE. And in your victory q. MONTANUS standsthe hazard of my fortunes: for if GANIMEDE go away with conquift, MONTANUS is in conceit loues Monarch, if PHOEBE winne, then am I in effect most miserable. We wil see this controuerfie q. GERISMÔD, & then we will to church: therefore GANIMEDE let vs heare your argument. Nay, pardon my abscence a while (quothee) and you shall see one in store.

R 3

In
Euphues

In went GANIMEDe and dreft her self in womans attire, hauing on a gowne of greene, with kirtle of rich fandall, so quaint, that she seemed DIANA triumphing in the Forrest: vpon her head she wore a chaplet of Roses, which gaued her such a grace, y' she looked like FLORA pearke in the pride of all hit floures. Thus attired came ROSALIND in, & presented her self at her fathers feete, with her eyes full of teares, cruing his blessing, & discourting vnto him all her fortunes, how she was banished by TORISMOND, and how euer since she lived in that country disguifed.

GERISMOND seeing his daughter, rose from his seat & fel vpon her necke, vttering the passions of his joy in warry plaints druen into such an extasie of content, that hee could not vttter one word. At this sight, if ROSADER was both amazed & joyfull, I refer my selfe to the judgement of such as haue experience in loue, seeing his ROSALYND before his face whom so long and deeply he had affected. At last GERISMOND recovered his spirites, and in most fatherly tearmes entertained his daughter ROSALYN, after many questions demanding of her what had past betwenee her and ROSADER. So much sir (quoth she) as there wants nothing but your Grace to make vp the marriage. Why then (quoth GERISMOND) ROSADER take her, shee is thine, and let this day solemnize both thy brothers and thy nuptials, ROSADER beyond measure content, humbly thanked the king, & imbraced his ROSALYNDE, who turning to PHOEBE, demanded if she had shewen sufficient reason to suppress the force of her loues. Yea quoth PHOEBE, & so great a perswasiue, that if it plesse you Madame and ALIENA to giue vs leaue, MONTANUS and I will make this day the thirde couple in marriage. She had no sooner spake this word, but MONTANUS, threw away his garland of willow, his bottle, where was painted dispair, & cast his sonnets in the fire, shewing himselfe as frolick as PARIS when he haued his loue with HELENA. At this GERISMOND and the rest smiled, and concluded that MONTANUS and PHOEBE shoule kpee
golden Legacie.

keepe their wedding with the two brethren. ALIENA seeing
SALADYN stand in a dumpe, to wake him from his dreame
began thus. Why how now my SALADYNE, all a mort,
what melancholy man at the day of marriage? perchaunce
thou art sorrowfull to thinke on thy brothers high fortunes,
and thyne owne bafe desires to chuse so meane a shepheardize.
Cheare vp thy hart man, for this day thou shalt bee married
to the daughter of a King: for know SALADYNE, I am not
ALIENA, but ALINDA the daughter of thy mortal enemie
TORISMOND. At this all the company was amazed,
especially GERISMOND, who rising vp, tooke ALINDA in his
armes, and said to ROSALYNDE: is this that faire ALINDA
famous for so many vertues, that forsoke her fathers court
to liue with thee exile in the country? The fame q. ROSA-
LYNDE. Then quoth GERISMOND, turning to SALADINE,
illy Forrefter be frolick, for thy fortunes are great, & thy
desires excellent, thou haft got a princesse as famous for her
perfection, as exceeding in proportion. And she hath with
her beauty won (quoth SALADYNE) an humble servaunt, as
full of faith, as she of amiable favour. While euerie one
was amazed with thefe Comical euentes, CORIDON came skipp-
ing in, & told them that the Priest was at Church and
married for their comming. With that GERISMOND led the
way, & the rest followed, where to the admiration of all
the countrey swains in Arden, their mariages were solemnly
solemnized. As soone as the Priest had finished, home they
went with ALINDA, where CORIDON had made all things in
readines. Dinner was prouided, & the tables being spread,
and the Brides set downe by GERISMOND, ROSADER, SALA-
DYNE, & MONTANUS that day were servitors: homely cheare
thay had, such as their country could affoord: but to mend
their fare they had mickle good chat, and many discourses
of their loves and fortunes. About mid dinner, to make
them mery CORIDON came in with an old crowd, and plaid
them a fit of mirth, to which he sung this pleasant song.

Cori-
Euphues

Coridons Song.

A blyth and bonny country Lasse,
heigh ho the bonny Lasse:
Sate fighing on the tender grasse,
and weeping said, will none come woo mee?
A smicker boy, a lyther Swaine,
heigh ho a smicker Swaine:
That in his Love was wanton faine,
with smiling looks straight came unto her.

When as the wanton wench espide,
heigh ho when she espide
The means to make her selfe a bride,
the fimpred smooth like bonny bell:
The Swaine that saw her squint eied kind
heigh ho squint eyed kind,
His armes about her body twind,
and fare Lasse, how fare ye, well?

The country kit said well forsooth,
heigh ho well forsooth,
But that I have a longing tooth,
a longing tooth that makes me crie:
Alas said he what garres thy griefe?
heigh ho what garres thy griefe?
A wound quoth she without reliefe,
I feare a maid that I shall die.

If that be all the shepheard said
heigh ho the shepheard said,

[le]
golden Legacie.

She make thee wine it gentle maide,
And so recure thy maladie.
Hereon they kist with manie a oath,
heigh ho with manie a oath,
And fore God Pan did plight their troath,
and to the Church they hied them fast.

And God send euerie pretie peate
heigh ho the pretie peate
That feares to die of this conceate,
so kinde a friend to helpe at last.

CORIDON hauing thus made them merrie: as they were in the midst of all their iollitie, word was brought in to SALADYNE and ROSADER, that a brother of theirs, one FERNANDYNE was arrivied, and desired to speake with them. GERISMOND ouer hearing this newes, demaunded who it was? It is sir (quoth ROSADER) our middle brother, that lyues a Scholler in Paris: but what fortune hath druen him to seek vs out I know not. With that SALADYNE went and met his brother, whom he welcommed with all curtesie, and ROSADER gaue him no lesse friendly entertainment: brought bee was by his two brothers into the parlour where they al fate at dinner. FERNANDYNE as one that knewe as manie manners as he could points of sophistrie, & was aswell brought vp as well lettered, saluted them all. But when hee efpied GERISMOND, kneeling on his knee he did him what reuerence belonged to his estate: and with that burst forthe into these speaches. Although (right mightie Prince) this day of my brothers mariage be a day of mirth, yet time craues another courfe: and therefore from daintie cates rife to sharpe weapons. And you the sonnes of Sir JOHN of Bourdeaux, leaue off your amors & fall to armes, change your loues into lances, and now this day shewe your selues as valiant, as he-thertoo you have been passionate. For know GERISMOND, that hard by at the edge of this forrest the twelue Peeres of France
Euphues

France are vp in Armes to recouer thy right; and TORISMOND troupt with a crue of desperate runnagates is ready to bid them battaile. The Armies are readie to ioyne: therfore shew thy selfe in the field to encourage thy subiects; and you SALADYNE & ROSADER mount you, and shewe your selues as hardie soldiers as you haue been heartie louers: so shall you for the benefite of your Countrey, discover the IDEA of your fathers vertues to bee stamped in your thoughts, and prove children worthie of so honourable a parent. At this alarum giuen by FERNANDYNE, GERISMOND leapt from the boord, and SALADYNE and ROSADER betook themselves to their weapons. Nay quoth GERISMOND, goe with me I haue horfe and armour for vs all, and then being well mounted, let vs shew that we carrie reuenge and honour at our fawchions points. Thus they leaue the Brides full of sorrow, especially ALINDA, who desired GERISMOD to be good to her father: he not returning a word because his haft was great, hied him home to his Lodge, where he deliuered SALADYNE and ROSADER horfe and armour, and himselfe armed royally led the way: not hauing ridden two leagues before they discovered where in a Valley both the battailes were ioyned. GERISMOND seing the wing wherein the Peeres fought, thrust in there, and cried SAINT DENIS, GERISMOND laying on such loade uppon his enemies, that hee shewed how highly he did esteime of a Crowne. When the Peeres perceived that their lawfull King was there, they grewe more eager: and SALADYNE and ROSADER so behaued themselues, that none durft stand in their way, nor abide the furie of their weapons. To be short, the Peeres were conquerours, TORISMONDS armie put to flight, & himselfe slaine in battaile. The Peeres then gathered themselues together, and saluting their king, conducted him royallie into Paris, where he was receiued with great joy of all the citizens. Asoone as all was quiet and he had receiued againe the Crowne, hee sent for ALINDA and ROSALYNDE to the Court, ALINDA being verie passionate for the death of her father: yet brooking it with
golden Legacie. 66

with the more patience, in that she was contented with the welfare of her Saladyne. Well, asfoone as they were come to Paris, Gerismond made a royall Feast for the Peeres and Lords of his Lande, which continued thirtie dayes, in which time summoning a Parliament, by the consent of his Nobles he created Rosader heire apparrant to the kingdom he restored Saladyne to all his fathers lande, and gaue him the Dukedom of Nameurs, he made Fernandyne princi-pall Secretarie to himselfe: and that Fortune might euerie way seeme frolicke, he made Montanus Lord ouer all the Forrest of Arden: Adam Spencer Captaine of the Kings Gard, and Coridon Master of Alindas Flocks.

Heere Gentlemen may you see in Euphues golden Le-gacie, that such as negleect their fathers precepts, incurre much preijdice; that diuision in Nature as it is a blemish in nurture, so tis a breach of good fortunes; that vertue is not measured by birth but by action; that yonger brethren though inferiour in yeares, yet may be superiour to honours; that concord is the sweetesf conlusion, and amitie betwixt brothers more forceable than fortune. If you gather any frutes by this Legacie, speake well of Euphues for writing it, and me for fetching it. If you grace me with that fauour, you encourage me to be more forward: and asfoone as I haue o-uerlookt my labours, expect the Sailers Kalender.

T. Lodge.

FINIS.